Effective Slip Lengths for Stokes Flow over Rough, Mixed-Slip Surfaces

by

Nathaniel Joseph Lund

A thesis
submitted to the Victoria University of Wellington
in fulfilment of the
requirements for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy
in Physics.

Victoria University of Wellington
2015

Abstract

In this thesis, homogenization and perturbation methods are used to derive analytic expressions for effective slip lengths for Stokes flow over rough, mixed-slip surfaces, where the roughness is periodic, and the variation in slip length has the same period. If the classical no-slip boundary condition of fluid mechanics is relaxed, the slip velocity of the fluid at the surface is non-zero. For simple shear flow, the slip velocity is proportional to the shear rate. The constant of proportionality has dimensions of length and is known as the slip length. Any variation in the slip length over the surface will cause a perturbation to the flow adjacent to the surface. Due to the diffusion of momentum, at sufficient height above the surface, the flow perturbations have diminished, and flow is smooth and uniform. The velocity and shear rate at this height imply an effective slip length of the surface. The purpose of this thesis is to predict that effective slip length.

Homogenization is a technique for finding approximate solutions to partial differential equations. The essence of homogenization is to construct a mathematical model of a physical problem featuring some periodic heterogeneity, then generate a sequence of models such that the period in question reduces with each increment in the sequence. If the sequence is appropriately defined, it has a limit model in the limit of vanishing period, for which a solution can be found. The solution to the limit system is an approximation to the solutions of systems with a finite period.

We use homogenization to find the effective slip length of a system of Stokes flow over a periodically rough surface, described by periodic function $h(x, y)$, with a local slip length $b(x, y)$ varying with the same period. For systems where the period L is smaller than both the domain height P and

typical slip lengths, the effective slip length b_{eff} is well-approximated by the harmonic mean of local slip lengths, weighted by area of contact between liquid and surface:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}}{b(x, y)} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{1}$$

We further use a perturbation technique to verify the above expression in the special case of a flat surface, and to derive another effective slip length expression: For a flat surface with local slip lengths much smaller than the period and domain height, the effective slip length b_{eff} is well-approximated by the area-weighted average of local slip lengths:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b(x, y) \rangle \tag{2}$$

Acknowledgements

Thanks are due first and foremost to my supervisor, Professor Shaun Hendy, for the opportunity to study fluid mechanics, and the freedom to do it my way. I would like to acknowledge Professor John Lekner (co-supervisor) for early inspiration in the art of theoretical physics.

The mathematician Dr Xing-You "Philip" Zhang suggested the use of the homogenization technique; this work has benefited immeasurably as a result. Philip patiently helped me learn homogenization and tease out the connection between the maths and the physics. Thank you, Philip.

The entirety of the work was carried out in the (now defunct) Applied Maths team at (the now defunct) Industrial Research Limited. I wish to thank the Applied Maths team for the resources and hospitality provided to me. I would like to acknowledge Peter McGavin for computer support, the most-recent leader John Burnell, and in particular former leader Graham Weir as an outstanding exemplar of skill in applied mathematics. I particularly wish to thank Robin Willink (formerly of Applied Maths), for stimulating discussions on the meaning and interpretation of models.

I have appreciated the company of many students, interns and workers along the way, including Brent, Peter Z, Srikanth, Amanda, Rebecca, Elf, Ben, Geoff the Ref, Keoni, Dion, Nicola, Catriona, Bryne, Udbhav, Kirsten, Donal, Julie, Simon, James, Gregor, Wayne, and various others.

Particular mention must be made of a few fellow students who have now graduated: my office-mate Dr Sione Paea, for the huge hugs, Dr Dmitri Schebarchov, who kindly read a partial draft of this thesis (thanks D, that helped a lot), Dr Shrividya Ravi, for the conversation and creamy balls, and Dr Krista Steenbergen, for her intensity and huge heart (bigger even than her mouth).

Extra-special feathery felicity to Christine Roseveare, for everything.

Contents

Chapter 1

Introduction

1.1 Background

How fast is the water at the bottom of the canal? Is it moving or at rest? The first person to provide an answer to this question (indeed, perhaps the first to ask it; entertainment was limited in those days) was probably Daniel Bernoulli. He claimed: the water is at rest. This pronouncement was made in 1738, but it was not until the twentieth century that this notion came to be accepted as universally valid. This notion is of course the 'no slip' boundary condition of fluid mechanics.

The foundations of fluid mechanics were laid by Navier and Stokes by about 1840. Their eponymous equation captured the fact that an element of fluid obeys Newton's Second Law $F = ma$ just as surely as 'solid' matter. But the Navier-Stokes equations are not enough: While they describe behaviour in the *bulk* of the fluid, to generate a complete description of the fluid, we need information about what goes on at the *boundaries.*

Unlike the case of the bulk fluid obeying Newton's universal laws of motion, there seemed to be no fundamental *a priori* principle at work on the boundary. However, there was a body of experimental work. Interestingly, no clear picture — let alone a clear principle — had emerged from the experiments. Bernoulli's early result had later been contradicted by experiments

showing *slip.* That is, the fluid in contact with the solid surface moved, or slipped, along the solid. By the 1840s, the issue had become sufficiently controversial that Stokes himself was commissioned to sort the matter out. At length, he determined that fluid did *not* slip along the solid surface. But the matter didn't end there; for example, Helmholtz found evidence of slip in the 1860s. The issue wasn't fully settled until 1927, when Tausz and Körosy published a book in which previous evidence of slip was dismissed as experimental artefact. An overview of this early history (and much more) is available in the excellent 2005 review article by Chiara Neto *et al* [39].

Thus, by the early twentieth century, the no slip boundary condition had become cemented in fluid mechanics textbooks. However, by the the twenty-first century, evidence was beginning to accumulate that the no slip condition sometimes does not hold. Before discussing this, it will help to introduce some mathematical machinery — specifically, the concept of *slip length.*

1.2 Slip Length

Let us consider what is surely the simplest case of fluid flow: Couette flow. In this canonical regime, some fluid sits between two parallel solid plates. One of the plates is moving at a constant velocity, with respect to the other plate. (For clarity we shall often assume that the bottom plate is stationary, and the top plate moves; another convention is that the two plates have equal and opposite velocities.) The plates are considered to be infinite planes; likewise, the interstitial fluid extends infinitely in all horizontal directions, so that there are no 'edges' to the system. We are interested in the flow velocity field of the fluid in the steady state. A schematic diagram of a Couette flow system is in Figure (1.1).

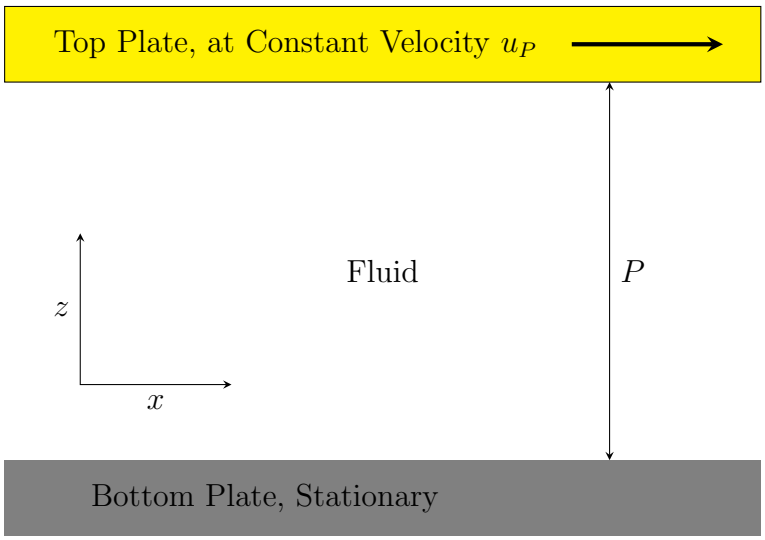


Figure 1.1: The system of Couette flow

This setup is amenable to experimental measurement; the point of theoretical physics is to generate a prediction of the measurements using mathematical reasoning. To that end, we need a mathematical model of the physical situation. We work in $\mathbb{R}^3$, with z being the vertical direction, and x the left-to-right horizontal direction. The fluid is modeled as a *continuum* velocity field $\vec{u}(x, y, z) = (u, v, w)$ obeying the Navier-Stokes equations at all points. The boundaries of the fluid – the two plates – are modeled as perfect x, y planes, separated by a width P. The bottom boundary is the plane $z = 0$, the top the plane $z = P$. The bottom boundary is stationary, while the top boundary has a constant velocity $\vec{u}_P$ in the x direction (with magnitude u_P).

To solve the Navier-Stokes equations, a boundary condition is required. Let's start with the simple classical case of no slip. Since the fluid sticks to the boundaries, the fluid at the bottom boundary has zero velocity, while fluid at the top boundary has velocity $\vec{u}_P$. The fluid has *viscosity*, that is, a layer of fluid atoms sliding over another layer causes a shear stress that tends to accelerate the lower layer. By this mechanism, the driving plate drives the entire bulk fluid, as the driving velocity propagates down through the fluid.

The steady-state solution is that the fluid velocity is in the x direction only, with a magnitude $u(z)$ that changes linearly between 0 at the bottom and u_P at the top:

$$u(z) = \frac{z}{P} u_P \tag{1.1}$$

A schematic of Couette flow with its characteristic linear velocity gradient appears in Figure (1.2).

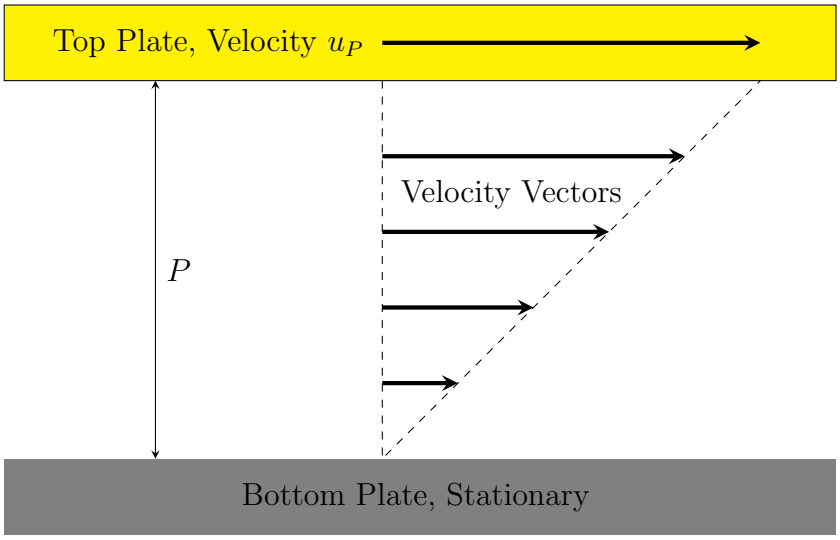


Figure 1.2: Couette flow

Now let's relax the no slip condition and consider some kind of *slip* boundary condition. The simplest such condition is that there is a finite slip velocity at the surface, and that velocity is proportional to the *shear rate* in the fluid. This condition was first proposed by Navier:

$$u_{\text{slip}} = b \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} \tag{1.2}$$

The constant of proportionality b, has units of length, and accordingly is known as the *slip length.*

Since the shear stress is proportional to the shear rate, the Navier slip relation says that the shear stress on the fluid at the boundary is proportional

to the fluid velocity at the boundary.

In the model in use here, the slip length has a simple geometric interpretation: The velocity gradient at the wall may be linearly extrapolated *into* the wall. The distance into the wall at which the velocity *would* be zero, is the slip length.

Couette flow with a non-zero slip length is shown in Figure (1.3).

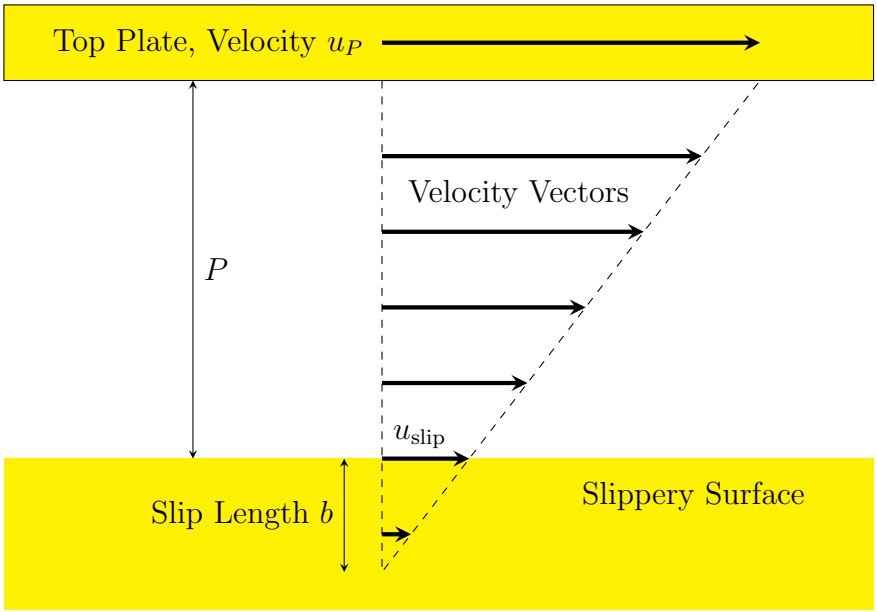


Figure 1.3: Couette flow with slip

At this point we stop to emphasize that the slip length is a feature of the *mathematical model*. We have assumed two things: First, the boundary between fluid and solid is a perfect Euclidean plane. Second, the fluid is a continuum, allowing for a well-defined velocity gradient at the boundary. Reconciling this Platonic ideal with a real physical experiment is non-trivial. We shall go into some depth with this issue shortly.

The slip length is a property of the fluid/solid interface, and can in principle vary in space. This leads us to the concept of *effective slip length*, the calculation of which is the subject of this thesis.

1.3 Effective Slip Length

Working again with the same model, let us assume the slip length b is a parameter that varies over the solid surface. This could model the case when the surface *material* changes spatially, eg. high-slip Teflon regions on a no-slip metal surface. Again, we seek a velocity flow field description of the fluid. In this case, a simple solution is not readily apparent — the problem has essentially gained an extra dimension. In fact, there are no known analytical solutions to this general problem.

The flow field near the surface will no longer be a straightforward laminar flow, but will be perturbed by the spatial variations in slip length. However, we would expect those perturbations to decay with increasing height above the surface. At sufficient height, the perturbations will be essentially zero, and the flow will be uniform laminar flow. This uniform flow has a shear rate that does not vary over space. Therefore, the velocity gradient can be extrapolated down to the solid surface, and *into* the surface, defining an *effective* slip length.

This is illustrated in Figure (1.4).

The far-field flow of the system is equal to that of an *effective* system, defined as follows: The effective system has the same top boundary condition, but has a no-slip boundary condition holding on a lower surface located distance b_{eff} below the surface of the original system.

The no-slip plane of the effective system is denoted the **effective no-slip plane.** Hence, the effective slip length of the system of perturbed Couette flow is the distance that the effective no-slip plane lies below the physical surface plane. See Figure (1.5).

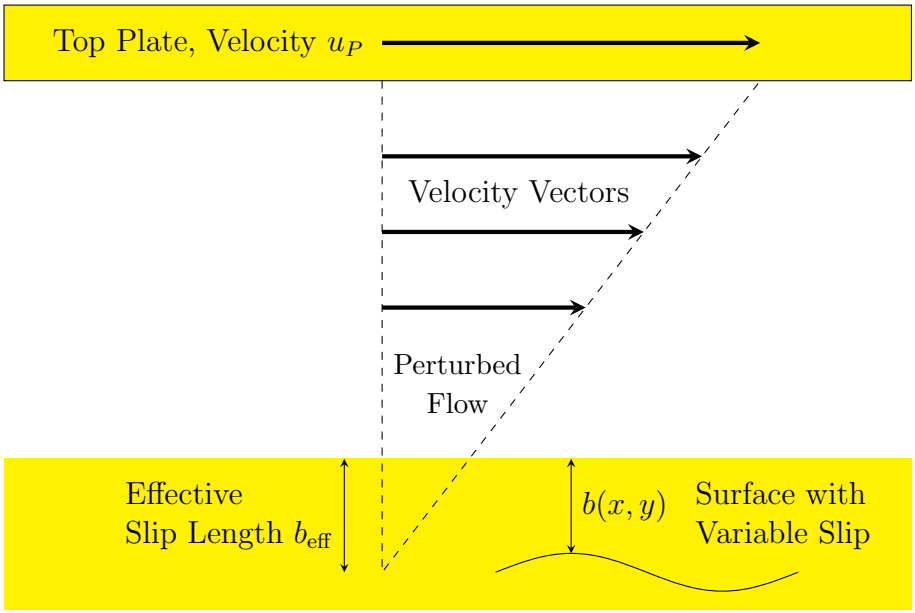


Figure 1.4: Effective slip length

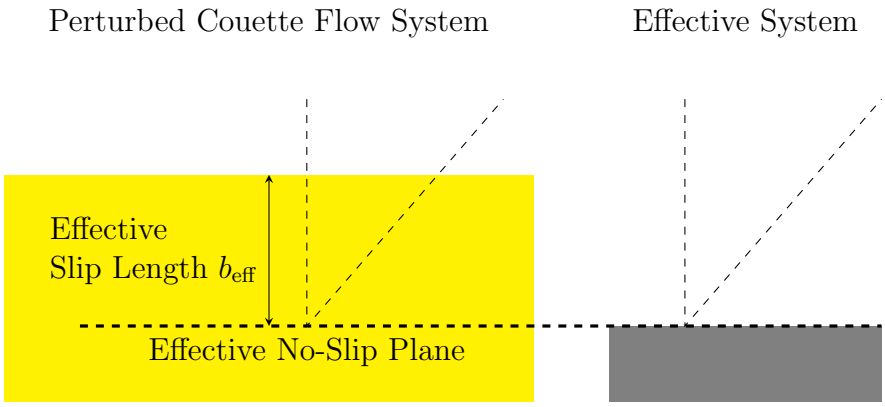


Figure 1.5: Effective no-slip plane

1.4 Effective Slip Length of Rough Surface

We now extend the model, allowing the solid surface to be *rough* rather than just flat. We allow the local slip length to vary over the surface, as before.

The definition of effective slip now acquires a subtlety: the solid-liquid interface is no longer a flat plane. The system still behaves like an effective system with an effective no-slip plane located below the physical surface. But now the distance from the physical surface to the effective no-slip plane is ambiguous. In principle, one could measure the distance from the troughs of the rough surface, or the peaks, or any point in between. See Figure (1.6). In fact, as we shall see in Chapter 3, this ambiguity caused apparent contradictions in the measurement of effective slip on rough surfaces, as different researchers adopted different conventions.

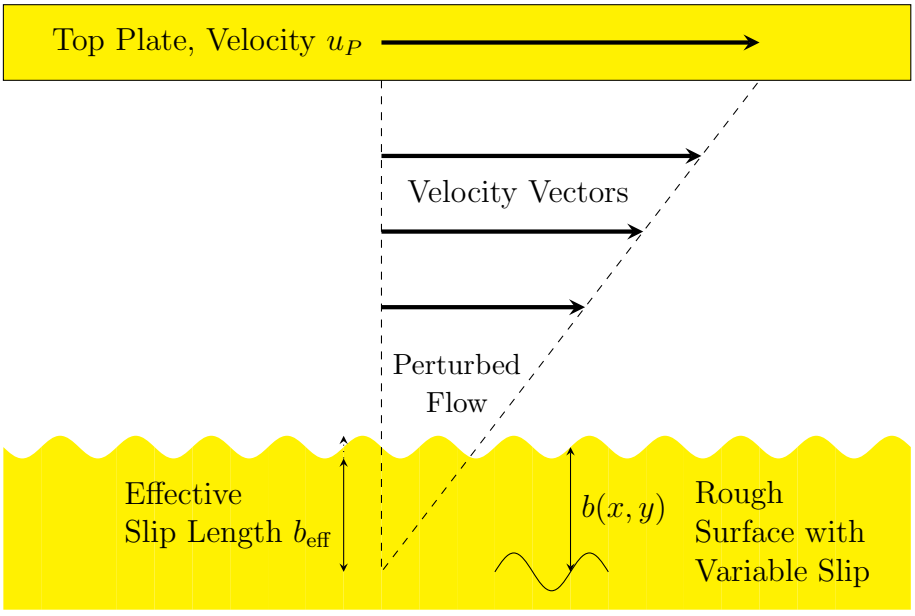


Figure 1.6: Effective slip length of rough surface

Defining a nominal surface plane at the **tops of the peaks** of the surface roughness is a defensible choice. See Figure (1.7). That way, pure bulk conditions hold above the nominal surface. Furthermore, physical instruments probing the position of the surface would tend to encounter the tops of the peaks, and record this as the surface position. Incidentally, this convention has the effect of maximizing effective slip lengths measured on rough surfaces.

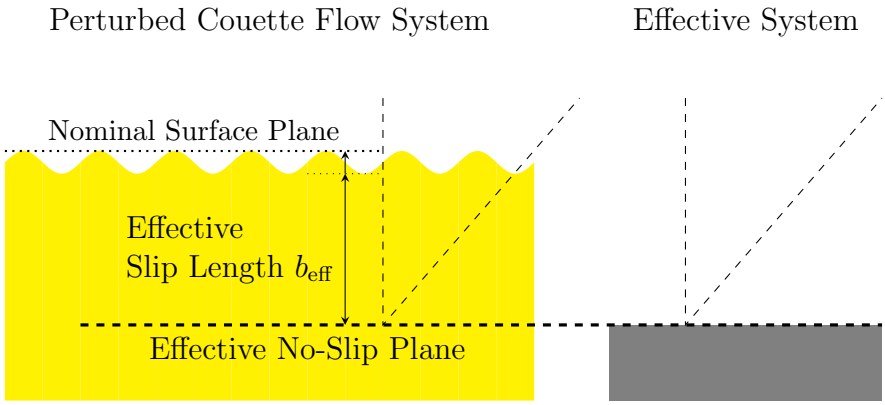


Figure 1.7: Effective no-slip plane with rough surface

1.5 Purpose of Thesis

The purpose of this thesis is to present a theory with which to predict the effective slip length, given knowledge of the local slip length:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = f(b(x, y)) \tag{1.3}$$

Furthermore, the theory can deal with a rough surface, where the rough surface is described by a height function $h(x, y)$:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = f(b(x, y), h(x, y)) \tag{1.4}$$

We present a formula for b_{eff}, in the idealized case where surface roughness is periodic, and the local slip length varies with the same period, in the limiting case where the local slip length is always large compared to the period of surface roughness.

The answer turns out to be that b_{eff} is the area-weighted *harmonic* average of the local slip length, where the area in question is the area of contact between solid and liquid.

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1 + h'^2}}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{1.5}$$

The core of this thesis is a rigorous derivation of this result.

We also confirm, using a completely different mathematical technique, the special case of a flat surface:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{1.6}$$

We further show that for a flat surface, in the opposite limiting case where the period is large compared to any local slip length, that b_{eff} is the area-weighted average of local slip lengths:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle \tag{1.7}$$

1.6 Application of Thesis

The question of whether or not fluid slips at the solid boundary is fundamental to fluid mechanics in the following sense: To solve the Navier Stokes equation, a boundary condition is needed, and the no-slip condition was accepted by consensus only after lengthy controversy. However, in almost all practical applications, plumbing, drainage, ship building etc., it turns out that any slip will be too small to matter. At the macro scale, the no-slip boundary condition is observed.

Only recently has the possibility of fluid slip become important, in the new fields of microfluidics and nanofluidics. In these fields, researchers and engineers fabricate devices in which fluid flows through pipes with a width measured in microns, or even smaller. In such channels, the high surface area to volume ratio works strongly against fluid flow. If the no-slip condition could be relaxed, then flow rates could be increased significantly.

Hydrophobic channel walls give the possibility of a non-zero intrinsic slip length. However, larger slip effects are attempted by creating surfaces that contain regions of *air,* perhaps trapped in small pockets on the surface. Then the fluid flows partly over an air-water interface, which is expected to have a large intrinsic slip length. Experiments show increased flow rates through channels with such walls [43, 25].

The question is then *how much* would flow rates increase with these exotic surfaces. This can be rephrased as 'what is the effective slip length of the surface?' This thesis offers a means of calculating the effective slip length for some cases.

1.7 Structure of Thesis

The core of this thesis is essentially the shortest possible physically and mathematically rigorous derivation of the harmonic mean formula for b_{eff}. The remainder of the thesis consists of an alternative derivation of a special case of the harmonic mean formula, a derivation of another formula for b_{eff} in the complementary regime, some numerical testing, and a brief look at some analogues of effective slip in other physical systems.

Chapter 2 'Does Slip Exist?' reviews the literature on slip, focussing at reasonable depth on the (few) papers that credibly demonstrate intrinsic slip on a clean, atomically flat surface. It ultimately concludes that an intrinsic slip length of 10 - 20 nm has been seen on hydrophobic surfaces.

Chapter 3 'Mixed Slip Flow' looks at flow over surfaces that are rough, or have a varying intrinsic slip length. The focus is on 'superhydrophobic' surfaces and nanobubbles, and the importance of carefully locating the $z = 0$ plane.

Chapter 4 'Effective Slip Length Expressions: Prior Work' is a literature review of previous results for an effective slip length. Since the work in this thesis has been published as three papers [22, 35, 36], the work is easily placed in context with other peer-reviewed articles.

Chapter 5 'The Mathematical Model' sets up the formal mathematical framework, including the definition and explanation of the velocity gradient tensor, and the simplification to Stokes flow.

Chapter 6 'The Homogenized Effective Slip Length' is the core of the thesis: The technique for solving partial differential equations known as homogenization is explained in some detail, and then applied to the effective slip problem. An expression for b_{eff} is derived for the regime where the period is much smaller than any local slip length.

Chapter 7 'Perturbative Effective Slip Lengths' uses the completely different technique of perturbation methods to derive b_{eff} for the special case of a flat surface. Also derived is another expression for b_{eff} that applies in the contrasting regime where the period is much larger than slip lengths.

Chapter 8 'Numerics' shows that numerical simulations using finite element modelling are in excellent agreement with our expression for b_{eff}.

Chapter 9 'Analogues of Effective Slip' takes a brief look at other physical problems that happen to be described by a very similar mathematical model to that analysed in Chapter 5, and therefore have a similar solution. A problem in thermal insulation, and a problem in catalysis are given a brief treatment.

Chapter 10 'Conclusion' summarises and considers future extensions to the work.

1.8 Publications from the Work of this Thesis

The work of this thesis has been published as three papers, with the second subsuming the first. The first was written by my supervisor Dr Shaun Hendy, after he developed a perturbative method to derive effective slip lengths for a one-dimensional flat surface, with analytical assistance from myself [22]. I then extended the perturbation method to derive effective slip lengths for 3-D flow over a two-dimensional flat surface. This work generalised the earlier result, and I wrote a paper describing it in 2008 [35], with supervision from Dr Hendy. Dr Xingyou 'Philip' Zhang then introduced us to the homogenization method, which has a standard solution to a certain class of problems – like ours – characterized by periodicity. With assistance from Philip, I applied the homogenization method to our problem, deriving an effective slip length for rough surfaces. I then organized testing of the result via molecular dynamics simulations performed by a fellow student, Keoni Mahelona. I wrote a paper describing this work in 2012 [36], with guidance from Dr Hendy and Dr Zhang.

Chapter 2

Does Slip Exist?

A theory of effective slip could be treated as a purely mathematical result, with the slip length being simply a parameter in the model. However, a theory of effective slip has practical value only if the slip length parameter has some physical meaning: quantifying the slip effect for flow over a homogeneous physical surface. Establishing that a slip effect exists on clean, atomically flat surfaces is far from trivial. Therefore, in this chapter we will examine the literature on the experimental and theoretical evidence for slip.

This cannot be a comprehensive review of all available literature, but rather will be a sample of some high-profile papers. An exhaustive review of the experimental literature is available in the 2005 review article by Neto *et al* [39]. Other comprehensive reviews are by Vinogradova in 1999 [60] and Lauga, Brenner and Stone in 2006 [31]. A reasonable introduction is the progress article of Granick *et al* from 2003 [20].

2.1 Types of Slip

So far, we have discussed slip within a mathematical model of fluid flow; this is deliberate: in such a model the concepts of slip and slip length are straightforward and intuitive. However, we now need to tackle slip in the real world, disentangling a partially-ordered hierarchy of concepts.

2.1.1 Definitions in the Literature

The 2006 review article by Lauga, Brenner and Stone [31] proposes the following definitions (some paraphrased):

- **Phenomenon of slip:** A fluid dynamics system behaving as if the fluid velocity at the wall differs from the wall velocity.
- **Molecular slip** (also intrinsic slip): 'Refers to the possibility of using hydrodynamics to force liquid molecules to slip against solid molecules.'
- **Apparent slip:** The case when the no-slip condition holds on the surface, but at larger length scales, the no-slip condition appears not to be valid.
- **Effective slip:** 'Refers to the case where molecular or apparent slip is estimated by averaging an appropriate measurement over the length scale of an experimental apparatus.'

These definitions are a good place to start. But they make no mention of *mixed-slip* surfaces. We shall accept these definitions, but modify and extend them to deal cleanly with the separate cases of pure *and* mixed-slip surfaces.

The first modification is to separate molecular slip from intrinsic slip.

- **Intrinsic Slip:** When a clean, atomically flat homogeneous surface behaves as if the no-slip condition does not hold.

With this definition, Intrinsic Slip may be due to Molecular Slip or Apparent Slip.

The second modification is to take Lauga *et al*'s concept of 'Effective Slip' and simplify it, then relabel it as simply 'Measured Slip'.

- **Measured Slip:** A slip effect measured with some experimental apparatus.

This allows us to use the phrase 'Effective Slip' to emphasize the possible heterogeneity of the surface:

- **Effective Slip:** A slip effect imputed to liquid-solid interface, where the surface is not known to be homogeneous and atomically flat.

We shall discuss some of these concepts in more depth.

2.1.2 Measured Slip

As we shall see shortly, all measurements are to some extent indirect: Experiments cannot yet directly probe the fluid velocity in the region within a few nanometers of the surface. A measurement of a slip effect may be measuring molecular slip, apparent slip, or, for a heterogeneous surface, any combination of the two.

There are no direct measurements of slip; if there were, they would be measuring molecular slip.

2.1.3 Intrinsic Slip

Suppose we can prepare a perfectly clean, atomically flat sample of some material. Further, suppose we can experimentally test the sample for slip effects with some pure liquid. If a slip effect appears, and can be consistently replicated, then the implied slip length is a meaningful, reliable parameter of the fluid-solid system. It is reasonable to label this the *intrinsic* slip length.

Intrinsic slip may be due to molecular slip or apparent slip.

2.1.4 Molecular Slip

'True slip' means that the fluid *at the boundary* has a non-zero velocity. At the smallest scale, the fluid velocity at a point is the average velocity of an ensemble of molecules. Thus, 'true' slip means that the average velocity of the molecules in contact with the wall is non-zero. This implies that the

molecules in contact with the wall are *not* all sticking to the wall all the time. If (some) fluid molecules at the surface are slipping along the surface, this is termed molecular slip.

There are no direct observations of molecular slip, though (as explained later) it is observed in molecular dynamics computer simulations.

A hypothetical mechanism for molecular slip in liquids could be one similar to the (known) mechanism for slip in gases – Knudsen Slip:

Molecular Slip in Gases – Knudsen Slip

In a gas, the mean free path is many times larger than the gas molecule size, so an interaction with the wall will almost certainly not involve another gas particle. Therefore, the interaction can be treated as a simple reflection.

A gas particle has some momentum in the direction tangent to the wall. If an incident gas particle simply *sticks* to the wall, then all of its tangential momentum is transferred to the wall. This is the case of 'stick' or the no-slip condition. If the particle subsequently detaches with a velocity in a random direction, *on average* its tangential momentum will still be zero – the same as the wall.

At the other extreme, suppose that an incident particle undergoes specular reflection, bouncing off the wall with no change in its tangential momentum. With no momentum loss, there is no 'friction', and the gas experiences perfect slip.

While specular reflection is defined as the equality of well-defined angles of incidence and reflection, the key aspect of the interaction is that the wall-particle force is always perpendicular to the wall, so the wall cannot change the tangential momentum of the colliding particle. This will always be the case if the wall is perfectly flat and rigid, although this is an idealised limiting case. In real systems exhibiting Knudsen slip, only some fraction of gas particles will undergo specular or close-to-specular reflection.

An effect similar to Knudsen slip may occur in fluids, although the mean free path in a liquid is generally less than the molecular diameter, so angles

of incidence and reflection become difficult to define. However, particle-wall collisions in which the particle loses no tangential momentum may still occur. A computer simulation where the wall is defined as perfectly flat and rigid would allow this.

2.1.5 Apparent Slip

Perhaps the simplest alternative to molecular slip to explain slip effects is apparent slip. The idea is that there exists a *boundary layer* of reduced viscosity at the solid surface. As a consequence of the lower viscosity, the velocity gradient in the boundary layer is *steeper* than in the bulk. Thus, the velocity gradient 'turns a corner' at the interface between boundary layer and bulk. The no-slip condition holds at the solid-liquid interface, but the velocity gradient in the bulk can be extrapolated to generate a slip length, as shown in Figure (2.1).

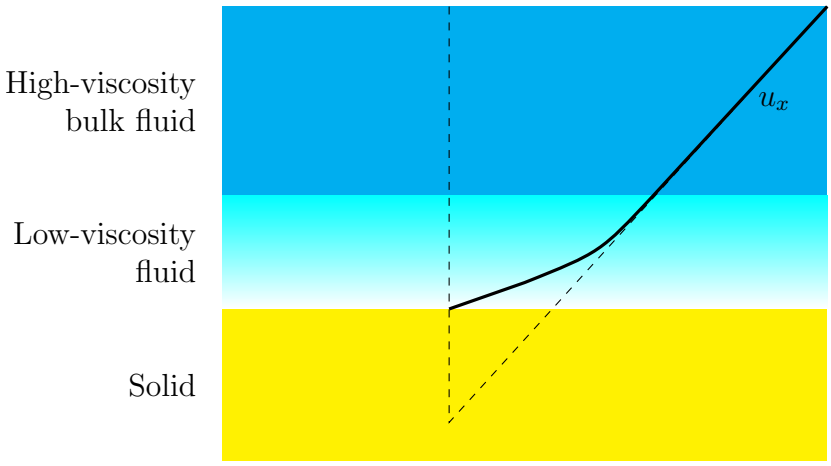


Figure 2.1: Apparent slip caused by a depletion layer with lower-than-bulk viscosity.

If the boundary layer has sufficiently low density, then only a very thin layer is required to explain observed effects: de Gennes notes that observed slip effects are explainable by a *gas* layer, only 1 or 2 atoms thick [18].

2.1.6 Types of Slip Redux

We summarize the hierarchy of slip concepts in Figure (2.2) below:

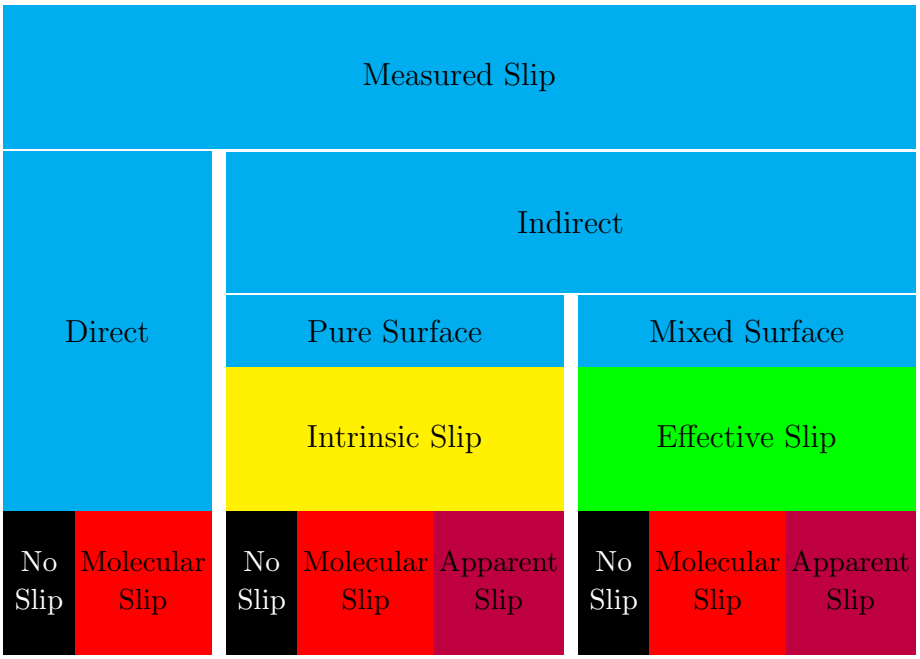


Figure 2.2: Hierarchy of slip concepts.

Note that the 'Direct Measurement' category is there just for completeness – as mentioned, experiments cannot presently verify molecular slip.

2.2 Experimental Intrinsic Slip

Probably the first credible experiments showing a slip effect are those by Erhard Schnell in 1956 [50]. In a series of careful experiments, Schnell treated glass capillaries with dimethyldichlorosilane to make them hydrophobic. The silicone layer decreased the capillary diameter by 0.01% to 0.04%. Nevertheless, at sub-turbulent velocities, the hydrophobic capillaries flowed 0% - 5% more water than otherwise-identical untreated capillaries. He attributed this excess flow to slip: " ...this can only be explained by the slippage of water over the non-wettable surface."

After Schnell, various experiments that illustrated slip were reported. But, it is fair to say that it wasn't until the 21st century that truly believable evidence appeared. Modern experimental techniques on slip progressed rapidly, starting from the 1990s, particularly after the widespread availability of the Atomic Force Microscope and its derivatives. The first of these new experiments exposed a large host of subtle errors and competing interpretations. See for example [45], [14], [4], [67], [8], [38].

Hence, there is little benefit in examining the complete history of slip experiments. Instead, we shall focus on more recent results, obtained with mature experimental techniques.

The are three common experimental techniques used to study slip: Capillary flow, drainage force, and particle velocimetry.

Capillary Flow

In this self-explanatory technique, the volumetric flow rates through capillaries are compared to standard theory. The standard theory for flow in a straight circular pipe with no-slip boundary conditions is Poiseuille flow. There is another analytic solution for the same pipe with Navier slip on the boundary. This solution is fitted to the experimental data; the parameter in question is the slip length. Thus, an imputed slip length is found.

Drainage Force

In this technique, a tiny sphere is repeatedly pushed towards the test surface. As the sphere nears the surface, the fluid is squeezed out of the way. The force required to squeeze the fluid depends on the boundary condition at the test surface. A theoretical model due to Vinogradova [59] is used to predict the force, with slip length as the adjustable parameter; by fitting the model to the data, a slip length is inferred. In practice, the sphere is mounted on a cantilever, and driven in an oscillatory fashion, with force being calculated by the deflection of the cantilever.

An Atomic Force Microscope (AFM) in tapping mode is often used, as well as a similar purpose-built apparatus known as the Surface Force Apparatus (SFA). This technique is very sensitive to inaccuracies in the position of the sphere relative to the surface. Recent results use sophisticated techniques to determine this accurately.

Particle Velocimetry

In this technique, thousands of tiny fluorescent particles are dumped in the flow. Various methods are used to track the particles, and infer their velocity. The particles are small enough that Brownian motion is significant, so that it is necessary to average their velocity over a finite volume. This obviously reduces the resolution of the inferred velocity field, so that this technique is still not 'direct' enough to see molecular slip. Slip lengths are inferred by extrapolating a fitted velocity profile.

2.2.1 Recent Experimental Literature

The widespread acceptance of the no-slip boundary condition of classical fluid mechanics was based on observation. But given that slip effects were not noticed until the length scale of experiments became extremely small, are we sure that the no-slip condition *really* holds? So our first order of business is to verify the no-slip condition at the smallest possible scales.

No Slip

Two recent papers show convincing evidence that the no-slip condition holds on hydrophilic surfaces.

The first, by Vinogradova and Yakubov in 2003 [61], was a drainage force experiment, one of the earliest to use an AFM for extra sensitivity, rather than the usual SFA. A silicate glass sphere was tapped onto a hydrophilic silicon surface, both of which were molecularly smooth: rms roughness was 0.3 nanometers peak-to-peak. (For comparison, a water molecule is about the same size.) The experiment revealed no slip.

The trouble with this sort of experiment is the difficulty in determining the exact distance between sphere and surface. This concern was taken very seriously in the second paper by Honig and Ducker, from 2007 [23]. They note: "It is important to note that an error in determining the position of the solid-liquid interface ($h = 0$) directly translates into an error in determining the slip length. In traditional colloidal probe measurements, the separation is not measured explicitly; the relative separation is determined from the sum of the displacement of a piezoelectric translation stage ("piezodisplacement") and the deflection of the cantilever. The zero of separation is inferred from the shape of deflection/piezodisplacement data." Problems include high force gradient near zero separation, thermal drift, and the fact that net separation is the small difference between two large measured displacements.

Honig and Ducker measure drainage forces with an AFM, but with what they claim is an explicit measurement of the separation between sphere and surface: "We obtain the separation from the intensity of scattering of an evanescent wave by the particle." The particle — the glass sphere of diameter 10μm, was hydrophilic, with an rms roughness of 0.7 nm peak-to-peak, and a typical maximum peak-trough roughness of 4.5 nm. The glass plate was also hydrophilic, with an rms roughness of 0.25 nm, and a typical peak-trough roughness of 1.5 nm. A highly-wetting sucrose solution was used, with $\theta < 5°$.

In six experiments, no slip was found, even at shear rates of 250,000 sec^{-1}.

Apparent or Molecular Slip

The same level (or even greater) of care was taken in drainage force experiments performed by Cecile Cottin-Bizonne *et al* in 2005 [13]. They used a SFA, but measured the distance between sphere and surface with a capacitive sensor, to a resolution of 1 Angstrom(!). The force on the plane was measured by the deflection of the cantilever on which it was mounted, with a resolution of 1 Angstrom. The sphere was hydrophilic, while the plane was rendered hydrophobic by silanization with octadecyltrichlorosilane. The plane was examined with an AFM, revealing a peak-to-peak roughness of 1 nm. Experiments were carried out in a clean and thermally isolated room.

With this setup, an implied slip of 19 ± 2 nm was measured. She emphasizes that the value "does not depend on any pre-estimated values of liquid properties (viscosity, diffusivity of optical tracers) or of the geometry of solid surfaces, unlike data analysis used in AFM experiments or fluorescence measurements". She further notes that early high-slip results were probably due to nanobubbles from cavitation or contamination with platinum nanoparticles. She finally notes that changing the environment to a clean room changed the results drastically(!).

It is worth noting that 'conventional' drainage force techniques continue to improve. A very recent (2011) paper by Neto *et al* [66] develops a 'best practice experimental protocol' for studying slip with an AFM. In a conventional AFM device, a piezoelectric element drives a small platform down towards the test surface. To the platform are mounted a laser, a photodiode and a cantilever spring. On the end of the cantilever is a small sphere — a colloid; hence the apparatus is known as a colloidal probe. When the colloid encounters hydrodynamic resistance, or hits the surface, the cantilever deflects. This deflection is optically detected by the photodiode. Thus, the raw outputs of a typical AFM are the displacement of the piezo element and the photodiode voltage.

Obviously, the colloid-surface distance is not directly measured, it is in-

ferred from raw data. This paper identifies two problems. First, the platform flexes, causing the laser and photodiode to move relative to each other, causing a spurious deflection signal. Second, when the colloid hits the surface, it scrapes sideways along the surface slightly. The resulting friction causes a deflection of the cantilever in addition to the deflection caused by the normal force. Neto *et al* quantify and correct for these effects in their processing of the raw data.

With this protocol, they study slip in di-n-octylphthalate, and find a reproducible slip length in the range 24 - 31 nm. The occasional slip length of ~ 60 nm prompts them to inspect the surface, *after* the slip experiments. They find contamination by nanoparticles about 20 nm in diameter, and note that this causes a false value for the zero of separation, which explains the occasional anomalously high slip measurement.

Turning now to particle velocimetry techniques, Huang *et al* in 2006 [24] presented a fairly standard application of this method, but with some care taken to prevent the formation of nanobubbles: Purified water was used, which was degassed by exposure to a vacuum for 30 minutes. 200 nanometer diameter tracer particles were dispersed in the water, which flowed down channels etched in PDMS plastic. Some channels were rendered hydrophobic by silanization with octadecyltrimethylsilane. The hydrophilic surfaces had rms roughness of 0.47 nanometers, while the hydrophobic surfaces has an rms roughness of 0.35 nanometers.

Total Internal Reflection Velocimetry was used to infer slip lengths for various shear rates. Hydrophilic surfaces showed slip lengths of 26 to 57 nm. Hydrophobic surfaces showed slip lengths of 37 to 96 nm. They say "A quantitative comparison of the two cases shows a slip length attributed to surface hydrophobicity ranging from -7 nm at low shear rates to 54 nm at the highest tested shear rate, with an average value of 16 nm." With experimental uncertainty taken into account, an upper limit of 150 nm for a

slip length is presented.

The problems of shear were eliminated in another particle velocimetry paper by Joly *et al* also from 2006 [26]. In this work, water containing fluorescent particles of typical diameter 200 nm was confined between two surfaces, of roughness 1 nm peak-to-peak. There was no macroscale flow, only thermal diffusion. The diffusion coefficient D was calculated by measuring the residence time of the particles in a detection volume, using fluorescence correlation spectroscopy. If the surfaces are hydrophilic, the particle mobility should be strongly reduced by the proximity of the wall. A finite element numerical solution to the Stokes equation gave a theoretical prediction for the mobility. For hydrophilic walls, the agreement between theoretical particle mobility and experimental particle mobility was "excellent". For hydrophobic silanized walls, theory agreed with experiment if the prediction included a slip length of 18 ± 5 nanometers.

These results are shear-free, ruling out flow-induced nucleation of nanobubbles.

Another complication of shear flow is that it can increase the effective diffusivity of particles — an effect known as Taylor dispersion. This complication is addressed in a 2009 paper by Vinogradova [58]. Glass capillaries, with rms roughness 0.3 nanometers, and silanized capillaries with rms roughness 0.7 nanometers were tested. Fluorescent nanoparticles were dumped in the flow, and their trajectories traced by double-focus fluorescence cross-correlation. When the predicted Taylor dispersion velocity was subtracted from the observed particle velocity, no slip was observed for hydrophilic capillaries, and a slip length of no more than 80 - 100 nanometers for hydrophobic capillaries.

Vinogradova notes "By varying the shear rate near the wall we found that it influences the value of the apparent slip. However, the true hydrophobic slip length remains the same." Since the surface is flat and not obviously contaminated, the reported 80 - 100 nm slip lengths are candidates for be-

ing intrinsic slip lengths. Finally, she notes that particle velocimetry is not expected to be capable of detecting slip lengths of a few tens of nanometers.

Molecular Slip?

A tantalizing glimpse of molecular slip is shown in a 2003 paper by Becker and Mugele [5] — but not with water. Rather, they do drainage force experiments with octamethylcyclotetrasiloxane (OMCTS), a much larger molecule than water. The authors were primarily interested in the layering of fluid molecules in confined geometries. Using a SFA to measure drainage force, they were able to observe discrete jumps in the force, as individual molecular layers escaped.

They model the system as consisting of n independent liquid layers and "introduce two different drag coefficients μ_{ls} and μ_{ll} to describe the friction between the solid substrates and the adjacent liquid layers and the mutual friction between two adjacent liquid layers, respectively". They fit the model to their experimental data and find a best fit value of $\mu_{ll} = (0.2 \pm 0.04) \times 10^{-13}\mathrm{s}^{-1}$ which is "remarkably close" to the value $0.3 \times 10^{-13}\mathrm{s}^{-1}$ predicted by bulk viscosity. The best fit value for μ_{ls} is 17.9 $\times\mu_{ll}$.

Becker and Mugele do not calculate a slip length from this information, but it can be done: We adopt a similar model of n independent liquid layers, but in a steady-state shear-driven Couette flow system. Each layer experiences a force $\mu_{ll}\Delta v$ from the layer above it, where Δv is the velocity difference between the two layers. Similarly for the drag force from the layer *below.* However, the bottom layer on the solid boundary is an exception. It has velocity v_{slip}, and the drag force due to moving over the stationary solid below it is $\mu_{ls}v_{\mathrm{slip}}$. Therefore, in the steady state, the bottom layer experiences two forces that balance:

$$\mu_{ls}v_{\mathrm{slip}} = \mu_{ll}\Delta v \tag{2.1}$$

The layers have thickness d_0, which Becker and Mugele measured to be (0.95 ± 0.1) nanometers. The geometry relating d_0 and the velocities to

the slip length b appears in Figure (2.3). The geometry shows two similar triangles, which means that $v_{\text{slip}}/b = \Delta v/d_0$.

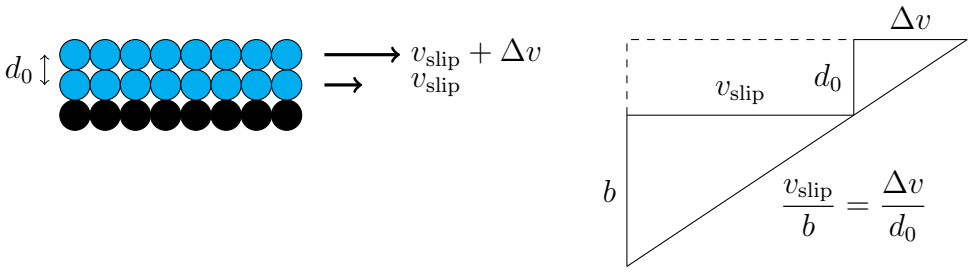


Figure 2.3: Deriving a slip length from a molecular slip experiment.

The similar triangles relation and the force balance equation give us:

$$v_{\text{slip}} = \frac{b}{d_0}\Delta v \qquad \text{and} \qquad v_{\text{slip}} = \frac{\mu_{ll}}{\mu_{ls}}\Delta v \tag{2.2}$$

Therefore:

$$b = \frac{\mu_{ll}}{\mu_{ls}} d_0 \tag{2.3}$$

Plugging in the numbers yields:

$$b = \frac{1}{18} 0.95 \text{ nm} = 0.05 \text{ nm} \tag{2.4}$$

If the data and model are correct, then Becker and Mugele have detected molecular slip with a slip length approximately 1/20th that of the molecule size. While small, this non-zero slip length shows that at least in the confined geometry of this experiment, the silicone molecules are not sticking to the walls.

2.2.2 Conclusions

These modern, sophisticated experiments investigate slip on atomically flat — rms roughness $<$ 1 nanometer — solid surfaces, with efforts made to reduce contamination by nanobubbles. They show no slip on hydrophilic surfaces. For the hydrophobic case, an undeniable intrinsic slip length is present. Two different particle velocimetry studies put an upper limit on

intrinsic slip length on the order of 100 nm. Four different techniques produce results consistent with a slip length in the range 18 ± 6 nanometers, at least for moderate shear rates.

In general, no experiment provides direct evidence of molecular slip in water, but these experiments eliminate various confounding factors, leaving molecular slip as a distinct possibility.

2.3 Theoretical Intrinsic Slip

Theoretical arguments for or against slip are somewhat thin on the ground. Computer experiments, in the form of molecular dynamics (MD) simulations, form the backbone of theoretical work.

Molecular Dynamics

Molecular Dynamics simulations involve the computer simulation of systems of particles governed by Newtonian mechanics. Each particle has a position and momentum, and a net force on it due to the interaction with neighbouring particles. Time is sliced into discrete timesteps. At each timestep, the force on each particle is calculated, then the (instantaneous) acceleration, then the resulting translation. Then the position of each and every particle is updated simultaneously, using the calculated translations. The process is then repeated at the next timestep.

The technique is rightly called a computer *experiment*, since the global behaviour is not predictable in advance. Emergent phenomena such as melting, crystallization, annealing, etc. have been very successfully studied with MD.

Molecular Dynamics simulations differ in their choice of interaction. A very popular choice is the Lennard-Jones interaction, because it is computationally cheap and physically sound: the interaction features an equilibrium distance σ between the particles, a strong repulsion at shorter distances, and

a weak attraction at longer distances. This models dipole-dipole Van der Waals forces quite well.

Since the power of MD studies depends on Moore's Law, the first serious MD study of the fluid boundary condition appeared in 1990, a paper by Thompson and Robbins [52]. This featured a Lennard-Jones fluid under Couette shear, in conditions equivalent to a compressed fluid about 30% above melting temperature. This was a qualitative study of the effects of varying two parameters: the wall-fluid interaction strength, ϵ_{wf}, and the wall *density.*

The wall is composed of stationary atoms. The separation between them can be arbitrarily set to any fraction or multiple of σ. The wall density is the inverse of separation distance. As the wall density tends to infinity, (separation diminishes to zero), the wall structure asymptotes to a flat plane. In this case, the force between fluid atom and wall is always *perpendicular* to the wall. With no tangential component, the force cannot change the tangential momentum of an incident particle. This is the case of perfect slip, as shown in Figure (2.4). Thompson & Robbins confirm that perfect slip holds, regardless of the strength of ϵ_{wf}.

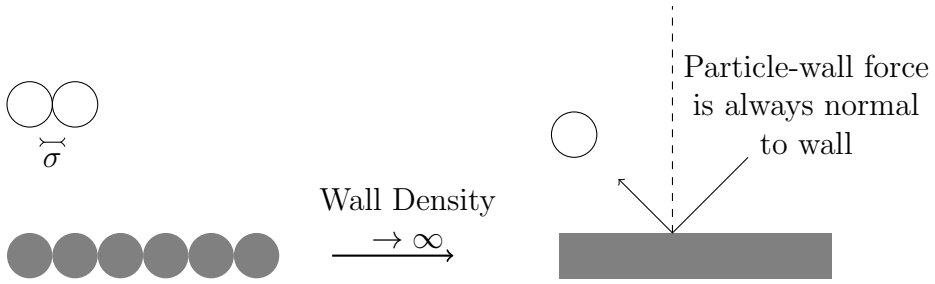


Figure 2.4: Infinite density of wall atoms leads to perfect slip.

As the wall density decreases, the wall gains some 'texture', and fluid atoms can be given a sideways kick by the peaks of the wall. Momentum transfer is now possible, and perfect slip no longer holds. When the wall density is equal to fluid density, (wall atom separation is σ), Thompson & Robbins observe the no-slip condition. At equal density, fluid atoms can attach epitaxially to the wall. If ϵ_{wf} is strong enough, one or two layers of fluid atoms lock to the wall. This is illustrated in Figure (2.5).

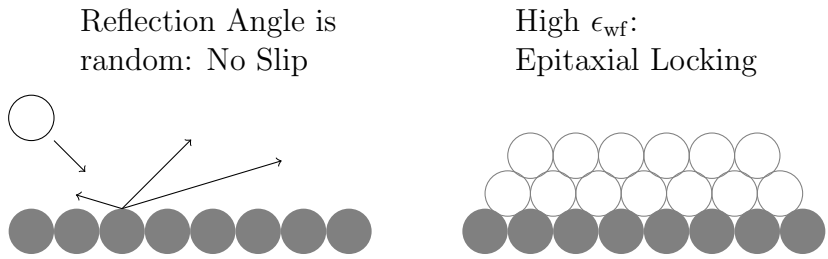


Figure 2.5: Wall atom separation equal to fluid atom diameter.

At a wall density of 2.52 times the fluid density (solid atom separation is 0.397 σ), Thompson & Robbins found that fluid layering was reduced, and slip increased. At higher ϵ_{wf}, however, the fluid atoms again formed a close-packed layer, but with a periodic structure that was a harmonic of the wall structure. At the highest ϵ_{wf}, the fluid atoms locked epitaxially to the wall, in a state of elastic strain. See Figure (2.6).

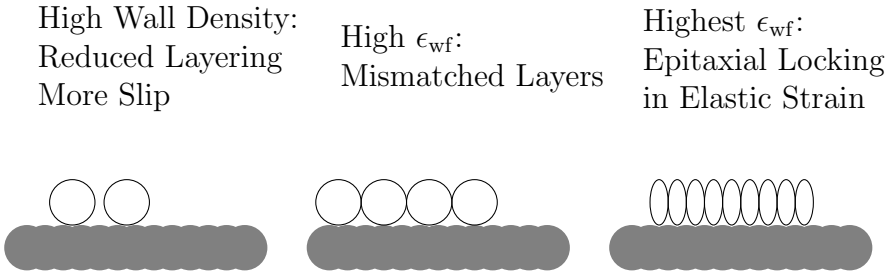


Figure 2.6: Wall atom separation 0.4 $\times$ fluid atom diameter.

Following this qualitative work, Thompson and Troian report some quantitative results from very similar Lennard-Jones simulations in 1997 [53]. Again they vary the wall density ρ_{wf} and ϵ_{wf}, (as a fraction of ϵ, the fluid-fluid interaction strength) as well as σ_{wf}, the equilibrium distance of wall and fluid atoms. Slip lengths in units of σ are calculated for various regimes, and appear in Table (2.1).

Table 2.1: Slip lengths (units of σ) for various simulation parameters.

ϵ_{wf}	σ_{wf}	ρ_{wf}	b
0.6	1.0	1	0
0.1	1.0	1	2
0.6	0.75	4	4
0.4	0.75	4	8
0.2	0.75	4	18

Now, $\epsilon_{\mathrm{wf}} < \epsilon$ means that a fluid atom is more attracted to other fluid atoms than to the wall. This could imply hydrophobicity; in general, hydrophobicity increases as ϵ_{wf} decreases. The top line of Table (2.1) describes the case where the fluid-solid and solid-solid equilibrium distances are equal to the fluid-fluid equilibrium distance. In this case, the fluid can lock epitaxially to the solid with absolutely no elastic strain. Here, no slip is recorded ($b = 0$) even though the fluid-wall interaction $\epsilon_{\mathrm{wf}} = 0.6$ suggests a mildly hydrophobic surface. Table (2.1) also shows that if the density of stable attachment sites is too high for epitaxial locking ($\rho_{\mathrm{wf}} > 1$), then slip results.

But the real story is the shear dependence of slip. The fluid is in a Couette flow regime, with top and bottom surfaces moving with equal and opposite velocities. At low shear rates, the slip length is a constant plateau, but at some critical shear rate, the slip length diverges. The critical shear rate depends on the regime. Interestingly, if the shear rates are normalised to their critical shear rate, and the slip lengths normalised to their plateau value, then the slip length versus shear rate data for all regimes lie *on a single curve.*

Thompson & Troian attempt to explain this "remarkable collapse of the data" with a single parameter R describing the roughness of the potential surface. A test particle at a fixed height experiences a potential $\phi(x, y)$. Define A as the area integral of $\phi(x, y)$, and A_∞ as the area integral of the limiting case of a flat plane (infinite atom density). Then

$$R = \frac{A}{A_\infty} - 1 \tag{2.5}$$

With a wall moving at velocity v, a test particle experiences perfect slip for $v > v_c$, some critical velocity. They find that v_c scales as $R^{1/2}$ for a wide range of parameters. In the real fluid (with hundreds of particles) they find v_c scales as a power of R with an exponent close to 3/4.

Thompson & Troian think it is reasonable to assume that v_c is set by the liquid-solid interaction timescale, so that increasing density should lead to larger v_c. They are surprised to find the reverse.

But this is an odd expectation. Assuming that the average approach velocity of impacting particles remains the same, a faster-moving or more dense surface surface increases the probability that the particle will interact with a peak. Since the peaks are the 'flattest' parts of the surface, the particle has a greater chance of being deflected by a force that is closer-to-normal to the surface plane, which will not change the tangential momentum of the particle as much. This implies increased slip.

Barrat and Bocquet [2] study flow in both Poiseuille and Couette regimes, using a Lennard-Jones fluid with an additional c_{ij} parameter:

$$v_{ij} = 4\epsilon \left[\left(\frac{\sigma}{r}\right)^{12} - c_{ij} \left(\frac{\sigma}{r}\right)^{6} \right] \tag{2.6}$$

They use $c_{FF} = 1.2$ for fluid-fluid interactions, making the fluid more cohesive than the usual Lennard-Jones fluid. They tweak the wetting properties via the c_{FS} fluid-solid parameter. There are several ways to calculate the contact angle from this parameter. The most accurate way gives $c_{FS} = 0.5 \rightarrow \theta = 140^\circ$ and $c_{FS} = 1.0 \rightarrow \theta = 90^\circ$.

A hydrophobic liquid ($\theta = 140°$) requires a pressure P_0 to pump it down the pipe. At high pressure, $P/P_0 = 16.4$, the fluid exhibited the same higher-density layering at the wall as seen in hydrophilic liquids. At a lower pressure, the fluid showed a **strong density depletion** near the wall. The slip length varied tremendously over this pressure range: from $b = 8\sigma$ for $P/P_0 = 16.4$ to over 40σ for $P/P_0 \sim 0$.

Less hydrophobic fluids showed less slip, and less pressure dependence. A $c_{FS} > 0.7$ ($\theta \leq 120°$) gave slip lengths of a couple of σ only.

Note that the position of the hydrodynamic boundary was treated as an adjustable parameter. It turned out to be located one atom width into the liquid. The arbitrary nature of the boundary position was not fully appreciated by the experimental community until almost 10 years after this sort of theoretical paper.

Correlation Function Tuned by Molecular Dynamics

In a theoretical study [6], Bocquet and Barrat start by constructing a phenomenological model of a fluid: Each infinitesimal volume of fluid has a *momentum.* This momentum field is subject to fluctuations, which quickly dissipate, obeying the diffusion equation. Further, any pressure gradient is proportional to the gradient of momentum divergence. Incorporating density ρ_0, shear viscosity η, bulk viscosity ξ, and dividing through by the volume element to get a momentum *density,* $\vec{j}(\vec{r}, t)$, in the bulk:

$$\partial_t \vec{j} + \nabla P - \frac{\xi + \eta/3}{\rho_0} \nabla[\nabla \cdot \vec{j}] - \frac{\eta}{\rho_0} \nabla^2 \vec{j} = 0 \tag{2.7}$$

And on the boundary, Navier slip holds:

$$\vec{j}_{\parallel} = b_{\text{wall}} \frac{\partial}{\partial \vec{n}} \vec{j}_{\parallel}, \qquad \vec{j}_{\perp} = 0 \tag{2.8}$$

Bocquet & Barrat now consider a fluid contained between two x, y planes separated by distance h. Slip lengths b_0 and b_h hold on the lower and upper planes, respectively.

A great simplification is to introduce the 'transverse momentum density':

$$j_x(z,t) = \frac{1}{L_x L_y} \int\int dxdy\ j_x(\vec{r},t) \tag{2.9}$$

And similarly for $j_y(z,t)$.

With the pressure gradient essentially integrated out, this field obeys the diffusion equation + Navier slip conditions:

$$\left[\partial_t - \frac{\eta}{\rho_0}\partial_z^2\right] j_x(z,t) = 0 \tag{2.10}$$

$$j_x(z,t)|_{z=z_0} = b_0 \partial_z j_x(z,t)|_{z=z_0}, \qquad j_x(z,t)|_{z=z_0+h} = -b_h \partial_z j_x(z,t)|_{z=z_0+h} \tag{2.11}$$

Work with the time-dependent correlation function:

$$C(z,z',t) = \langle j_x(z,t), j_x(z',0)\rangle \tag{2.12}$$

where angle brackets denote a thermodynamic average.

Finally, this equilibrium correlation function also obeys the diffusion and Navier slip equations:

$$\left[\partial_t - \frac{\eta}{\rho_0}\partial_z^2\right] C(z,z',t) = 0 \quad : \quad 0 < z < z_0 + h \tag{2.13}$$

$$C(z,z',t)|_{z=z_0} = b_0 \partial_z C(z,z',t)|_{z=z_0} \tag{2.14}$$

$$C(z,z',t)|_{z=z_0+h} = -b_h \partial_z C(z,z',t)|_{z=z_0+h} \tag{2.15}$$

There is a general solution (details omitted):

$$C(z,z',t) = f(b_0, b_h, h) \tag{2.16}$$

That is, the correlation function is a function of *slip length* and *channel width.* The parameter 'channel width' is equivalent to 'effective position of the boundary condition'. Bocquet & Barrat note that in Couette flow, the two parameters are not independent, but in general may be.

Now, one can directly observe a molecular dynamics simulation, and calculate the correlation function from the atomistic dynamics that occur in the simulation. Bocquet & Barrat carry out an equilibrium MD simulation — no shear or pressure, just thermal motion — and compute the correlation function. The parameters of the theoretical correlation function are adjusted to fit the MD correlation function.

Thus, a slip length and effective boundary position are derived from MD, without inducing and measuring velocities, therefore eliminating shear dependence from the slip effect.

The first MD experiment used a repulsive-only fluid/wall interaction – a 'soft sphere' model. The wall had a corrugation with wavelength of 1σ, and a varying amplitude. Results for various amplitudes are shown in Table (2.2).

Table 2.2: Slip lengths for different amplitudes of wall corrugation.

Amplitude	Slip Length	BC Position
0 (flat)	∞	1.60
0.01	40 ± 2.5	1.60
0.02	7.20 ± 0.05	1.60
> 0.03	0.00 ± 0.02	1.60

The remarkable result is that even a tiny corrugation — depth 0.03 σ — is enough to completely suppress slip. Also, the hydrodynamic BC is located about one atom width inside the fluid.

A second Lennard-Jones MD simulation with a corrugation depth of 0.2 σ was done. Particles locked epitaxially to the solid, with zero slip, and a BC located two atom widths inside the fluid.

As a final test, Bocquet & Barrat do a conventional Couette flow MD simulation, extracting velocity profiles to infer slip lengths. The results agreed with the equilibrium method.

Depletion Layer and Drainage Force

In a landmark paper from 1995 [59], Olga Vinogradova studied the 'drainage of a thin liquid film confined between hydrophobic surfaces'. The results are in two main parts.

The Boundary Conditions on the Hydrophobic Surface:

Vinogradova looks at the two candidates for intrinsic slip: molecular slip and apparent slip. She notes that molecular slip was first proposed by Tolstoi back in 1952; his theories were revisited by Blake in 1990, who predicted the slip effect on flow rate in a capillary. These predictions sometimes matched experiment, but Ruckenstein and Rajora in 1993 noted that the implied surface diffusion coefficients are several orders of magnitude larger than those observed even for gases.

Having found evidence for molecular slip wanting, she considers apparent slip. A 'gas gap' has been suggested as the cause, but this is not experimentally confirmed. Another model of apparent slip is the decrease in viscosity in a boundary layer close to the hydrophobic surface. Crucially, she states: "this fact follows from numerical simulation data, as well as from the direct experimental results obtained by the blowoff method. (Derjaguin *et al* 1993)". From this firm foundation, Vinogradova notes that if the boundary layer of thickness δ has an average viscosity μ_{slip}, smaller than the bulk viscosity μ_{bulk}, then an order of magnitude estimate of apparent slip length is:

$$b = \delta \left(\frac{\mu_{\text{bulk}}}{\mu_{\text{slip}}} - 1 \right) \tag{2.17}$$

This model covers the case of bubbles on the surface, and Vinogradova observes that much experimental slip may be due to dissolved gas, causing bubbles to form on the surface or in microcavities.

Solution of the Drainage Problem:

Vinogradova considers two perfectly spherical (no roughness) solids being squeezed together at (instantaneous) velocity v in a Newtonian fluid of viscosity μ. The two spheres have radii R_1 and R_2, and slip lengths b and $b(1+k)$ on their surfaces, respectively. She derives a formula for the drainage force F_z in terms of separation h:

$$F_z = -\frac{6\pi R_e^2 \mu v}{h} f^* \quad \text{where} \quad R_e = \frac{R_1 R_2}{R_1 + R_2} = \frac{R_1}{\frac{R_1}{R_2} + 1} \tag{2.18}$$

In the limiting case of a hydrophobic sphere interacting with a similar one:

$$f^* = (2)\frac{h}{6b}\left[\left(1 + \frac{h}{6b}\right)\ln\left(1 + \frac{6b}{h}\right) - 1\right] \tag{2.19}$$

Note that $R_e = R_1$ in the case of a sphere approaching a flat plane ($R_2 = \infty$).

This formula has been used by the experimental community in all subsequent drainage force experiments.

Depletion Layer as a Gas Layer

In paper from 2002 in Langmuir [18], de Gennes derives the slip length expected of a hypothetical gas layer. De Gennes finds the then-recent very high experimental slip lengths "unexpected and stimulating." (These experiments are now suspected of being contaminated with bubbles; de Gennes is thus prescient in his gas layer theory.) "This led us to think about unusual processes which could take place near a wall. In this Letter, we discuss one (remote) possibility: the formation of a gaseous film at the solid/liquid interface.

"The source of the film is unclear: when the contact angle is large ($\theta \to 180°$), a type of flat bubble can form at the surface with a relatively low energy. But this energy is still high compared to the thermal energy $k_B T$."

With these caveats stated, de Gennes derives the slip length expected for a bulk fluid of viscosity η, sliding over a gas layer of density ρ, and uniform

thickness h. Layer thickness h is assumed to be greater than the molecule size, but smaller than the mean free path in the gas.

Unfortunately, there are a few issues: there seem to be several typographical errors, and the result is stated in terms of the somewhat unfamiliar $\bar{v}_z$, which is defined as the mean **absolute value** of the normal component of gas particle velocity (the simple mean is zero). To resolve the inconsistencies, and restate the result in a more standard way, in Appendix A we derive the result from scratch, in terms of the mean *speed* in the gas, $\bar{v}$. We find:

$$b = \frac{4\eta}{\rho\bar{v}} \tag{2.20}$$

(We show that this is equivalent to the result of de Gennes.)

Note that $b = 4\eta/\rho\bar{v}$ is the slip length parameter found in the boundary condition located at the **bottom of the fluid.** If b is instead regarded as a property of the *solid* surface, then the gas layer thickness h must be subtracted. We shall see that this is negligible:

Plugging in typical values: $\rho = 1$ kg/m^3, $\bar{v} = 476$ m/s, $\eta = 10^{-3}$ kg/ms, we get $b = 8$ μm. De Gennes: "Thus, a gas film can indeed give a very large slip length. Our calculation assumed complete thermalization at each particle/boundary collision. If we had some nonzero reflectance (especially on the solid surface), this would increase b even more."

De Gennes notes that the amount of gas required is very small, but that a "process which could generate such films remains obscure." Serendipitously, the very next year, Andrienko *et al* proposed an abstract description of just such a process.

Phase Separation causing a Depletion Layer

The depletion layer theory of slip was given another boost by Andrienko *et al* in a 2003 paper [1]. Rather than focusing on what the low-viscosity boundary *is,* they take an agnostic, abstract approach: They considered a toy model of a generic admixture of two different fluids, whose viscosities differ by the (arbitrary) ratio 1:3. A 'phase field' approach was used, in which an order parameter ϕ varies over space. Here, ϕ was the fraction of low-viscosity fluid in an infinitesimal volume.

The unmixing of the fluid is driven by energy. Andrienko *et al* start with a free energy functional — the semigrand potential. With this functional set up, they consider the physical case of Couette flow between two fairly close plates. Variation of the functional yields an Euler-Lagrange equation and a boundary condition.

These equations were solved numerically using the relaxation method. With the ϕ field solution, the viscosity field was obtained by simply assuming that viscosity is a linear combination of the pure viscosities. Finally the Couette flow field was solved for the viscosity field.

The big result is that above a certain temperature, a layer of the low-viscosity fluid suddenly forms on the surface. Andrienko *et al* call this a 'prewetting transition'. This causes the sudden emergence of a significant slip length. As temperature increases above this critical temperature, more mixing occurs, reducing the viscosity contrast, thus reducing slip length.

Andrienko *et al* believe this mean-field toy model to be valid for liquid-gas systems, binary mixtures, and polymer mixtures in the long wavelength approximation. Thus, large slip is predicted for those systems.

2.4 Conclusions

There exist a few recent experimental studies confirming intrinsic slip over hydrophobic surfaces, where the solid surface is flat – less than 1 nm rms roughness – and care has been taken to minimise contamination by nanobubbles.

The drainage force experiment of Cottin-Bizonne *et al* in 2005 [13] featured a resolution of 1 Angstrom for the probe to surface distance. They found a slip length of 19 ± 2 nm. This is consistent with the particle velocimetry experiments of Joly *et al* of 2006 [26], which estimated the diffusion coefficient of unmoving water, thus eliminating issues of shear-induced bubble formation. The model fitted to the results implied a slip length of 18 ± 5 nm. More conventional particle velocimetry experiments by Huang *et al* in 2006 [24] with degassed water showed a shear-dependent slip length. Given the experimental uncertainties, they present an upper limit of 150 nm for the slip length. Vinogradova in 2009 [58] noted that shear flow can increase the effective diffusivity of particles in the velocimetry experiment. Her calculations from her experimental results take this into account, yielding a slip length of no more than 80 - 100 nm for hydrophobic capillaries.

On the theoretical side, intrinsic slip is observed in molecular dynamics simulations [52], [53], [2], [6]. At sufficiently low pressure in the liquid, Barrat and Bocquet observe a depletion layer – a layer of lower-than-bulk density liquid at the solid surface [2]. The effect of a density layer was explored by de Gennes in 2002 [18]. He shows that observed slip effects are explainable by a gas layer one or two atoms thick at the surface. Andrienko *et al* in 2003 [1] presented a model of a binary mixture of high and low viscosity fluids. In the model, above a certain temperature, a depletion layer spontaneously formed on the surface.

In the next chapter, we turn to flow over mixed-slip surfaces, where the intrinsic slip length is different on different parts of the surface.

Chapter 3

Mixed-Slip Flow

In this short chapter we look at the challenge of defining a slip length of a surface that is *rough.* There is some choice as the location of the $z = 0$ plane, leading to some ambiguity regarding slip lengths. The issue is clarified with the concept of the no-slip plane. We then define two rough surfaces of mixed slip length: superhydrophobic surfaces and surfaces covered with nanobubbles. Experimental results showing high slip over these surfaces are discussed. Finally, the concepts in this chapter are illustrated in a description of an experiment in which the presence of nanobubbles appears to *reduce* slip.

3.1 Rough Surfaces

While the slip length of a perfectly flat surface is an intuitive concept, the definition of the slip length of a *rough* surface is more troublesome. The question "What is the slip length of this surface?" suddenly acquires a resonance with the old Vaudeville joke "How's your wife?"; the answer: "Compared to what?".

3.1.1 Rough No-Slip Surfaces

To clarify, consider Couette-like flow over a rough surface composed of material with *no* intrinsic slip length. The system *behaves like* an equivalent system with a *flat* no-slip boundary surface. Define this boundary as the **effective no-slip plane.** Where is the position of the effective no-slip plane in relation to the original rough surface? It is likely to be located at a level between the troughs and peaks of the roughness, but if the roughness caused significant turbulence, then it may be located *above* the peaks of the roughness. See Figure (3.1).

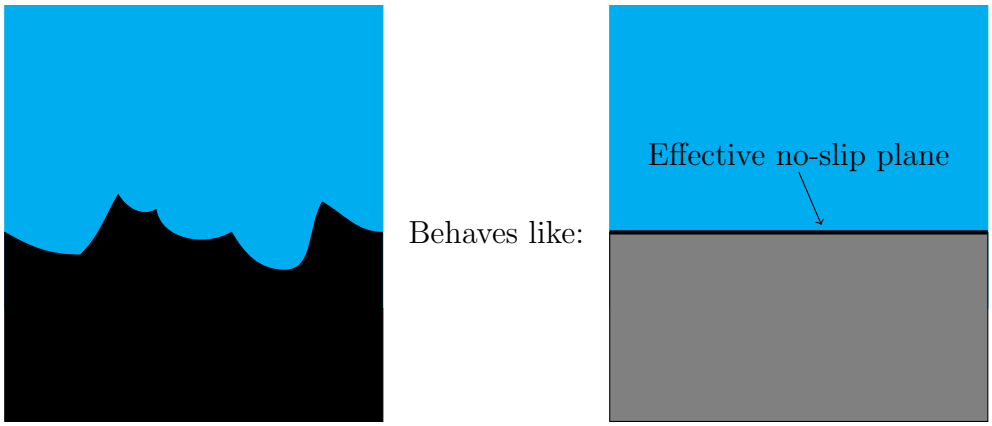


Figure 3.1: A rough no-slip surface behaves as if an effective no-slip plane was located somewhere above the troughs of the roughness.

In a sense, the position of the effective no-slip plane is what is measured by a macro-scale slip experiment. For example: a rough-walled capillary of

nominal diameter d flows as much as a smooth-walled capillary of diameter d_{eff}. Then, loosely speaking, the slip length is the distance between the effective no-slip plane and the physical surface. But if rough, the physical surface is not a plane, but a nominal surface *region* of finite width. The issue then, is to decide where to locate a flat *reference plane*, from which to measure the slip length. The reference plane corresponds to the $z = 0$ plane in the mathematical model of the system. See Figure (3.2).

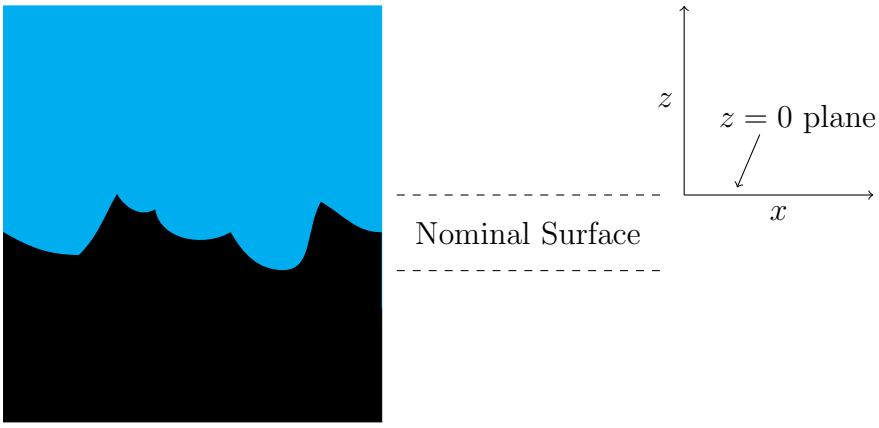


Figure 3.2: The $z = 0$ plane of the mathematical model maps to some part of the nominal surface region of the physical surface.

Once the location of the $z = 0$ plane has been chosen, a slip length can be defined as the distance between the $z = 0$ plane and the effective no-slip plane. By convention, if the effective no-slip plane is *below* the $z = 0$ plane, then b is positive. Obviously, if the $z = 0$ plane is located at the bottom of the troughs of the roughness, then the slip length could be *negative*. See Figure (3.3).

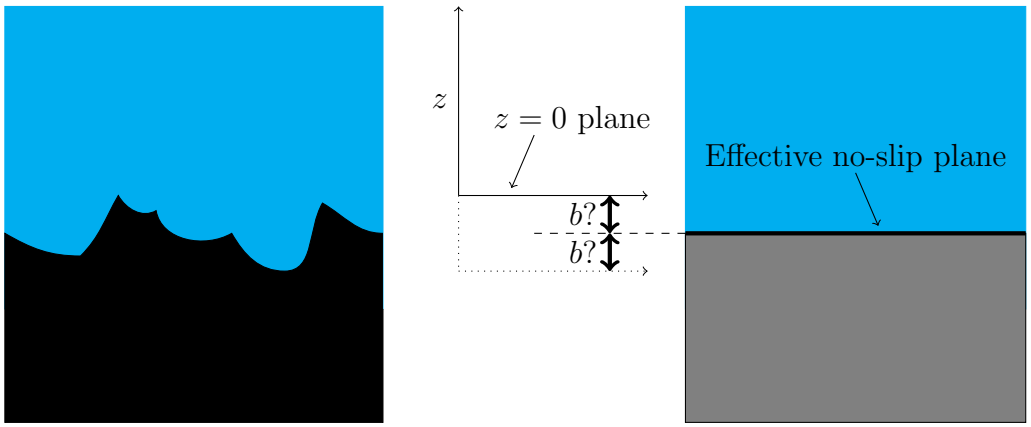


Figure 3.3: The measured slip length of a rough surface depends on the choice of location of the $z = 0$ plane.

The importance of defining the location of the $z = 0$ plane was first made explicit in a paper by Vinogradova and Yakubov in 2006 [62]. They used a purpose-built AFM device that tapped a roughened sphere onto a smooth plane. The sphere had an rms roughness of 10 - 11 nm, and a maximum peak-to-valley distance of 45 nm. With the surface taken to be at the tops of the peaks, a reduction in drainage force was observed, compared to a smooth sphere of equal diameter. But the reduction was not due to slip: The force was equivalent to that of a smooth sphere whose surface was located at an intermediate position between the peaks and valleys of the roughness.

Thus the issue is clarified: if the boundary is taken to be at the valleys of the roughness, then roughness reduces slip. Conversely, if the boundary is taken to be at the tops of the peaks, then roughness *increases* slip. They note "We believe our paper entirely clarifies the situation with flow past rough surfaces, highlights reasons for existing controversies, and resolves apparent paradoxes."

The phrase 'effective no slip plane' first appears in an article by Kunert and Harting in 2007 [28]. They carried out numerical simulations using lattice Boltzmann methods on different surfaces. Each surface has minimum and maximum heights, h_{min} and h_{max}, and an average height h_{average}. They

calculate the position of the effective no-slip plane, h_{eff}. In all cases, h_{eff} was always considerably higher than h_{average}. If the surface has a few very tall but sparsely distributed spikes, then h_{average} can be much smaller than h_{max}, and h_{eff} lies somewhere between them and cannot be well approximated by either.

The "existing controversies" and "apparent paradoxes" mentioned by Vinogradova and Yakubov in [62] include a 2002 paper by Zhu and Granick [68] showing that roughness suppresses slip, and a 2003 paper by Bonaccurso, Butt and Craig [7] claiming that roughness could increase slip, even on a hydrophilic surface:

In 2002, Zhu and Granick published results of drainage force experiments on hydrophobic surfaces of varying roughness [68]. The molecularly smooth surface showed a flow dependent slip length of up to 35 nm, while rougness *suppressed* slip, with a roughness of 6 nm giving no slip at all. They defined the $z = 0$ level in the surface force appartatus by 'adhesive contact in air'. Therefore, the $z = 0$ level could well be below the tops of the roughness peaks. No effort was made to account for this.

The paper from 2003 by Bonaccurso, Butt and Craig [7] claimed that roughness could *increase* slip, even on a *hydrophilic* (contact angle zero!) surface. They measure drainage forces of a glass sphere approaching a silicon surface roughened up to 12.2 nm rms. They discuss the importance of defining the zero distance. They end up defining it at the tops of the peaks, as this is the first point of contact. They calculate slip lengths by fitting the data to Vinogradova's model. The best fit is when they fix the slip length on the glass sphere at about 43 nm, and increase the slip length of the substrate as roughness increases. Under 'normal' conditions, they find a slip length of 3.5 nm for maximum roughness of 12.2 nm. But for extremely high approach velocities, for the same roughness they find a slip length of 900 nm!

Surfaces with Slip

If a rough surface has a non-zero intrinsic slip length on all or part of its surface, then the effective no-slip plane may be located well below the nominal surface region. There will still be a range of reasonable effective slip lengths, depending on the choice of the location of the $z = 0$ plane. See Figure (3.4).

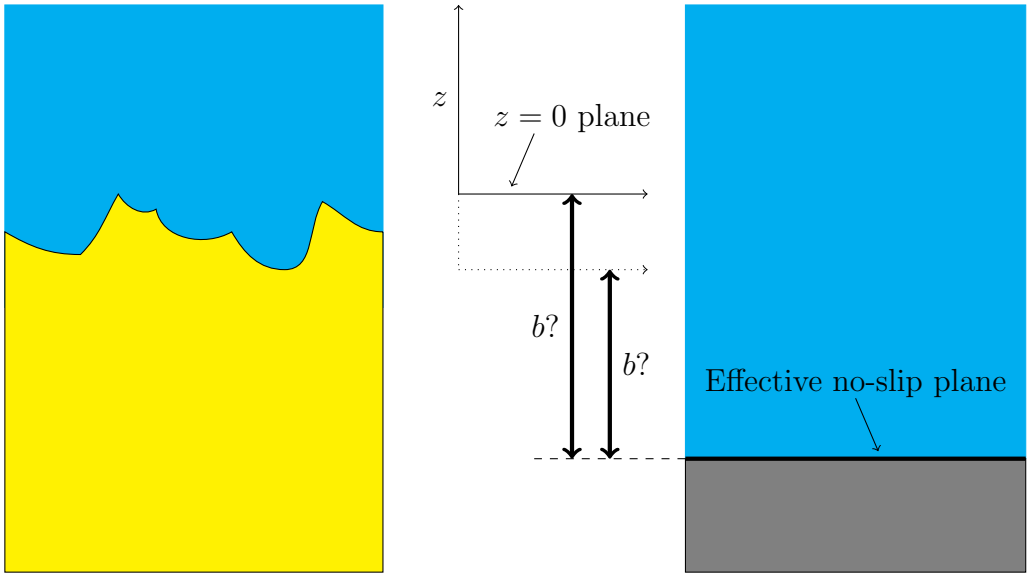


Figure 3.4: The measured slip length of a rough surface with intrinsic slip depends on the choice of the location of the $z = 0$ plane.

Note that it is still possible to get a *negative* slip length on a surface with high intrinsic slip lengths, if the $z = 0$ plane is located at the bottom of the valleys of the roughness. In general, the best choice for the location of the $z = 0$ plane is at the *tops of the peaks* of the roughness, ensuring that slip lengths are usually positive.

3.2 Mixed-Slip Surfaces

We turn now to study surfaces in which the intrinsic slip length varies over the surface. Dramatic variations in the intrinsic slip length of a surface may be achieved if part of the surface is composed of gas. The intrinsic slip length of the liquid-gas interface is expected to be large compared to that of the liquid-solid interface. There are two solid-gas surface types important to current research: superhydrophobic surfaces and surfaces with nanobubbles. Because the liquid-gas interface is a *meniscus* that is usually curved, by their nature, these surfaces are usually rough. (Having said that, they are sometimes modelled as being flat.)

3.2.1 Superhydrophobic Surfaces

Recall that when a droplet of water sits on a surface, a contact angle θ is defined as in Figure (3.5).

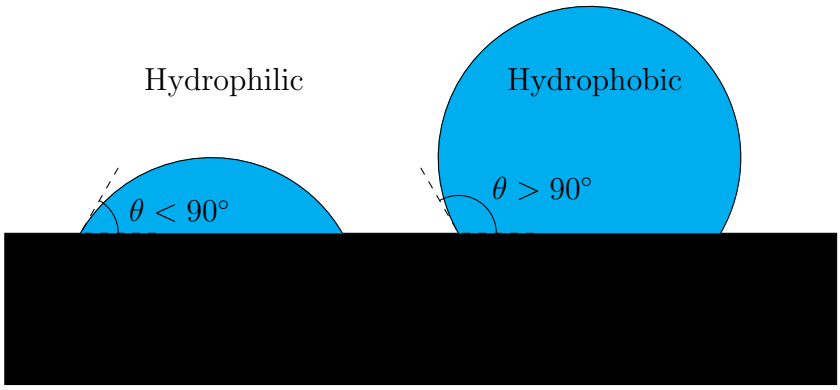


Figure 3.5: The contact angle θ of a surface.

Usually, a surface is defined as *hydrophobic* when the contact angle is more than 90°. (If $\theta < 90°$, the surface is *hydrophilic*. If $\theta \sim 0°$, then *complete wetting* occurs: the water spreads out as far as it can.)

Tiny, micron or nanometer scale pillars can be constructed out of hydrophobic material. A collection of theses hydrophobic nanopillars can be

affixed to a suitable substrate, forming a 'nanoforest'. (Or, more practically, a nanoforest can be constructed, then chemically treated to become hydrophobic.) If a water droplet is placed on top of the nanoforest, two curious things happen: First, the droplet sits on the tops of the nanopillars, supported by surface tension. Second, the apparent contact angle is very large, well over 90°. An illustration appears in Figure (3.6). Due to the extremely high contact angle, these nano or micro-structured surfaces are known as *superhydrophobic* surfaces.

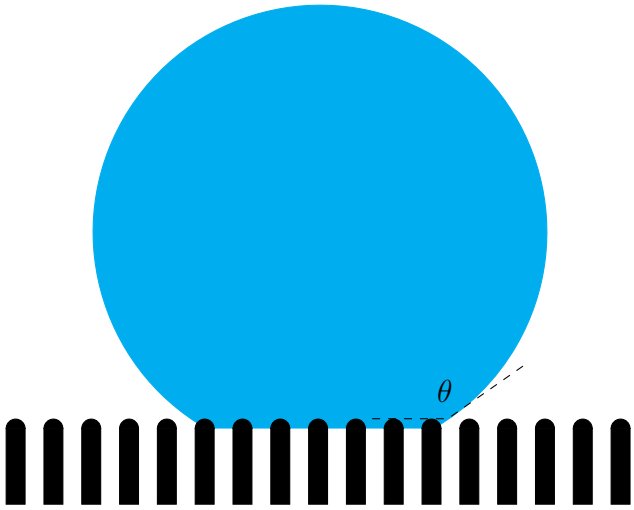


Figure 3.6: Superhydrophobicity: surface tension supports a water drop on top of nanopillars, with a very high apparent contact angle

Such surfaces were constructed as early as 1996. Onda *et al* [42] discussed the theoretical contact angle of such a surface, and demonstrated a "super-water-repellent fractal surface" made of alkylketene dimer, with a remarkable contact angle of 174°.

Enormous contact angles are routinely quoted for static droplets. The contact angle is slightly different if the droplet is advancing (or retreating). This hysteresis was studied, for example, by Kusumaatmaja and Yeomans in 2007 [29].

But perhaps more interestingly, superhydrophobic surfaces were first observed in nature. The sacred lotus is an aquatic plant (not a water lily, but similar) whose water-repellent qualities have been noted since antiquity. A passage in the Baghavad Gita states "One who performs his duty without attachment, ... is unaffected by sinful action, as the lotus is unaffected by water." In 1993, Barthlott and Neinhuis were taking scanning electron micrographs of the leaf surfaces of some 10,000 plant species. They noticed that *flat* surfaces always had to be cleaned before examination, while certain rough waxy surfaces did not. They characterised these self-cleaning surfaces as covered with wax crystalloids "in a regular microrelief of about 1 - 5 μm" – i.e. superhydrophobic. They describe the cleaning mechanism: Water beads into near-spherical droplets, which easily roll off the leaf. Dirt particles tend to be hydrophilic, and only weakly bound to the tops of the roughness. Thus the dirt particles are captured by the water droplets, and move with them off the leaf. More from antiquity: a Confucian scholar wrote "I love the lotus, because while growing in mud, it is unstained." In a pair of papers in 1997 [3, 37], Barthlott and Neinhuis describe their studies of what they dub the 'lotus effect'.

The image of a droplet supported by thin spikes inspires another metaphor: a Fakir (malnourished Yoga practitioner) sitting on a bed of nails. David Quéré's article 'Fakir droplets' gives a very readable summary of the state of affairs in 2002 [48]. The quote of relevance to this thesis is the last few sentences of the article: "On a superhydrophobic solid, however, drops seem to move over a dynamic film of air — which makes the friction comparable to that experienced by a raindrop falling in air. But what happens if these textured solids are fully immersed in a pool of water? Will the water still slide on them? Except for a few controversial studies, this question still remains open, and designers of boats and swimsuits impatiently await an answer."

These questions form the backdrop to the line of research leading to this thesis.

3.2.2 Nanobubbles

In 2001, Tyrrell and Attard discovered what appeared to be nanobubbles on hydrophobic surfaces [56]. An extract from the abstract of their paper in Physical Review Letters says it all: "Imaging of hydrophobic surfaces in water with tapping mode atomic force microscopy reveals them to be covered with soft domains, apparently nanobubbles, that are close packed and irregular in cross section, have a radius of curvature of the order of 100 nm, and a height above the substrate of 20 – 30 nm." See schematic of Figure (3.7).

It had been observed that when two hydrophobic bodies were brought together underwater, at some very close separation, a 'hydrophobic force' suddenly pulled them together. In 2002, Tyrrell and Attard published [57] more AFM images of nanobubbles, and proposed them to be the origin of the 'hydrophobic force'.

Figure 3.7: Nanobubbles of gas on a solid surface.

The question naturally arises: when are nanobubbles present? Yang and coworkers published in 2007 [63] an exhaustive experimental study on the factors influencing the formation of nanobubbles, such as temperature, dissolved gases etc. It turns out that if a surface had been immersed in ethanol before being immersed in water, then nanobubbles are reliably formed.

Using this 'solvent exchange' technique, Zhang, Quinn and Ducker in

2008 [65] were able to do repeatable studies of nanobubbles. Using infrared spectroscopy, they confirmed the presence of a gas phase 5 – 80 nm thick at the surface — i.e. good evidence that the 'soft domains' really are nanobubbles. An AFM was used to determine the radius of curvature of the bubbles; the implied Laplace pressure in the bubbles was found to be 1.0 – 1.7 atmospheres. This pressure allows nanobubbles of air to remain stable for days. They find that nanobubbles form much more easily on rough surfaces, sometimes even without the solvent exchange technique.

Given the fact that rough surfaces may spontaneously form nanobubbles, the question arises: How many ostensibly 'pure' slip experiments are actually experiments on *mixed-slip* surfaces? A purpose of the research in this thesis is to give some indication of the effect of such nanobubble contamination on a slip experiment.

In summary, mixed-slip surfaces tend to fall into the two types described above: either a solid surface interspersed with pockets of air (nanobubble type), or a gas-liquid interface interspersed with islands of solid material (superhydrophobic type). Thus, a superhydrophobic type surface has a contiguous *air-liquid* interface, while a nanobubble type surface has a contiguous *solid* phase.

In the two-dimensional case, the difference disappears. *Neither* the solid-liquid nor air-liquid interfaces are contiguous. Physically, this surface consists of a grating of parallel ridges, with an air gap between the ridges. The liquid sits on the top of the ridges, and the air-liquid interface forms a meniscus between the ridges.

3.3 Rough Mixed-Slip Flow

3.3.1 High Slip Over Solid-Gas Surfaces

In 2003, Cottin-Bizonne *et al* published a paper [12] in which they stated "Our results show for the first time that, in contrast to common belief, surface friction may be reduced by surface roughness." In fact, what they discovered is that flow over a rough surface may transition into the superhydrophobic state, with the fluid now flowing over vapour pockets.

Cottin-Bizonne and coworkers looked at molecular dynamics simulations of a Lennard-Jones fluid flowing over a flat surface decorated with narrow square posts. At sufficiently low pressures, the fluid entered the Cassie state, as a vapour phase spontaneously formed at the surface, leaving the fluid supported on top of the posts. The surface had an intrinsic slip length of 20 - 25 σ (atom diameters). In the Cassie state, effective slip lengths up to 57 σ appeared. For very narrow posts – 4.9 σ, slip lengths could reach 130 σ. Note that slip lengths were measured from the bottom of the cavity, so the post height — 6 σ — could be added to the slip lengths.

A physical demonstration of this superhydrophobic Cassie state flow was presented by Choi and Kim in 2006 [9]. They were probably the first to deliberately engineer a surface for maximum slip: 'nanoturf', silicon nanoposts about 1 - 2 μm high, spaced about 0.5 - 1.0 μm apart, rendered hydrophobic by a 10 - 20 nm thick layer of Teflon. They estimated the air fraction of the surface to be 60 %.

A commercial cone-and-plate rheometer was used to measure slip lengths: a collosal 20 μm for water and 50 μm for 30 % glycerine solution. (They expect this, since the viscosity of the glycerine solution is 2.5 times greater than that of water.)

Such high slip lengths were not replicated in a more careful study by Joseph *et al* also in 2006 [27]. They did particle image velocimetry on channels coated with carbon nanotubes of diameter 50 - 100 nm, spaced 100 - 250

nm apart. The tops of the nanotubes could be evenly spaced, or clumped together like wet hair, giving inter-clump length scales of 1.7, 3.5 or 6 μm. The derived slip lengths for the three surface morphologies were roughly 0.4, 1.0 and 1.4 μm, respectively.

They note that their results are an order of magnitude smaller than the 20 μm slip lengths of Choi and Kim, and point out that rheological methods lack the sensitivity to measure surface effects.

An effort was made by Lee and Kim in 2011 [33] to maximize slip by making a heirarchical structured surface — nanoposts on top of microposts. It worked if area fraction taken up by the microposts was large enough. Below about 10% area fraction — a realistic figure — the advantage began to disappear, and at 4% area fraction, the heirarchical surface gave *lower* slip than conventional unadorned microposts.

A one-dimensional version of the superhydrophobic surface is a nanograting — a surface covered with ridges, with the water supported by surface tension on top of the ridges. In 2006, Choi *et al* [10] presented slip experiments on a "well-defined nanograte": ridges 500 nm high and 50 nm wide, separated by a gap of 180 nm. Thus the pitch (period) was 230 nm. If the grating was left hydrophilic, they believe that water fully wets the surface, penetrating down into the troughs. After rendering the surface hydrophobic with Teflon, they believe that there is air in the troughs. Experiments were carried out with both states, with fluid flow both parallel to, and transverse to the ridges.

They could measure slip lengths to a resolution of only 30 nm, thus they were unsure if the hydrophobic surface had any intrinsic slip. For flow parallel to the ridges, there was a clear distinction between the slip lengths of hydrophilic and hydrophobic surfaces. 30 ± 15 nm for hydrophilic, and 143 ± 35 nm for hydrophobic. For transverse flow, they found insignificant slip, 0 ± 17 nm for hydrophilic, and 61 ± 44 nm for hydrophobic.

Protruding Nanobubbles Reduce Slip

As noted earlier, roughness may apparently decrease the effective slip length, if the reference $z = 0$ plane is taken to be at the lowest point of the roughness. This was an appropriate choice for the experimental setup of Steinberger *et al* of 2007 [51].

One can imagine the difficulties in studying a surface of nanobubbles, given their random, uncontrolled nature. Steinberger *et al* addressed the issue by studying flow over a flat surface covered with holes 1.3 μm wide and 3.5 μm deep. Air can be trapped in the holes; they derive slip lengths via drainage force measurements on the resulting microbubble surface.

The plane $z = 0$ is located on the flat surface, at the tops of the holes. In the Wenzel state, with water filling the holes, they measure a slip length of 105 ± 10 nm. With air trapped in the holes they find a *lower* slip length: a mere 20 ± 10 nm. They discover that the microbubbles protrude an estimated 200 - 400 nm above the flat surface, with the meniscus subtending an angle between 30° and 60° to the flat surface. Is this protrusion into the bulk the cause of low slip lengths?

They test this hypothesis numerically, with a finite element package (Comsol). They find a flat bubble ($\theta = 0°$) gives maximum slip length — about 160 nm. Any increase in θ decreased slip, with $\theta > 45°$ giving a lower slip length than the Wenzel state.

The following year (2008) Hyväluoma and Harting replicate and extend Steinberger's numerics [25]. By using lattice Boltzmann methods, they can model the bubble deforming under stress. They essentially replicate Steinberger: a maximum slip of about 150 nm at zero protrusion angle, plummeting down past zero slip length for a protrusion angle greater than about 70°

They simulate Couette flow, so are able to investigate shear dependence. In steady state shear-driven flow, they see a *decrease* in slip length with increasing shear. This contradicts some earlier claims. However, higher shear

rates deform the microbubbles, reducing the average height of the microbubbles.

Incidentally, the idea that slip is reduced by protruding bubbles had been proposed by Lauga and Brenner in 2004 [30]. In a theoretical paper, they present a model to explain the shear-dependent slip found by Zhu and Granick in 2001 [67]. They assume that the surface was (unknown to the experimenters) covered in bubbles. Slip lengths were inferred from the drainage force of a probe slamming into the surface at various speeds. As the probe approach velocity increases, so too does the pressure in front of it. This increased pressure causes the bubbles to shrink, both from compression of the gas and increased diffusion into the liquid. The reduced bubble height widens the channel, making drainage easier, for a given probe-surface distance. Thus, this 'leaking mattress effect' causes a shear-dependent slip effect to appear.

3.4 Conclusion

In summary, high slip lengths are possible over mixed-slip surfaces: more than 100 nanometers for nanogratings, and more than 1 micron for nanoforests. However, the effective slip length has a slightly ambiguous definition; the quoted slip length depends on the nominal position of the $z = 0$ plane. Things are clarified by introducing the concept of an effective no-slip plane. This is an objective concept: the surface behaves as if the no-slip plane was located at a given position. Then, the slip length is the distance between $z = 0$ and the effective no-slip plane. Thus, if the no-slip plane becomes lower, then the slip length is increased, and vice versa. A sensible choice for the position of the nominal $z = 0$ plane is the *top of the roughness.* That way, quoted slip lengths will often be positive. Note that if the $z = 0$ plane was chosen to be *below* the no-slip plane to start with, lowering the no-slip plane still *increases* the slip length. Another benefit is that a physical instrument

probing the surface will tend to encounter the surface peaks, and record that as the surface position.

Chapter 4

Effective Slip Length Expressions: Prior Work

This thesis presents a new expression for the effective slip length of mixed-slip surfaces. To establish the novelty, we must place our new expression in the context of other results in this field. Hence, this chapter is a literature review of the field of effective slip. The results of this thesis are already published as three papers in this field [22, 35, 36]; thus, the work of this thesis is easily placed in context amongst other peer-reviewed papers.

There are a small number of results for effective slip lengths in the literature. In this chapter, we survey a dozen or so of them. This cannot pretend to be comprehensive — there may be results hidden in obscure journals, behind paywalls, or camouflaged by nonstandard terminology. Further, mathematically equivalent results may exist in fields unrelated to fluid mechanics. There is nothing we can do about this. The best we can claim to do is present some 'high profile' results in the field of fluid slip.

4.0.1 Categorizing Results by Regime of Applicability

The published results for an effective slip length are applicable in different physical situations. It is useful to sort these different regimes by the following

criteria:

- **Navier Stokes** versus **Stokes 'Creeping' Flow**. A few results use the full Navier Stokes description of fluid flow. However, slip is very small scale phenomenon, so it is relevant only if the characteristic length scale of the flow is also very small. In that case, the Reynolds number will be very small, and the Navier Stokes equation will be very well approximated by the simpler Stokes flow equation. (This is covered fully in the next chapter.) Accordingly, most results have been derived assuming only Stokes 'creeping' flow.

- **Flat** versus **Rough**. Assuming the boundary to be a plane is a major simplification, warranted on grounds of mathematical tractability. The majority of effective slip results make this assumption.

- **2-D Flow** (1-D Surface) versus **3-D Flow** (2-D Surface). If the surface is symmetric in one dimension, then the flow above it will have the same symmetry. Thus, full three-dimensional flow reduces to two-dimensional flow over a one-dimensional surface pattern. About half of effective slip results tackle this simpler case.

- **Perfect-slip/Zero-slip Binary Surface** or **Not.** Assuming a binary surface, comprising regions of either vanishing slip ($b = 0$), or perfect slip ($b \to \infty$) only, can enable considerable simplification of the mathematics. Half of all effective slip results tackle this limiting case.

These categories are used to construct Table 4.1. All the papers that we shall survey in this section appear in the table, in their appropriate categories. Some papers appear in more than one cell; in that case, the paper presents more than one result. Note that if a paper gives a *single* result for a case that *subsumes* another case (eg. a 3-D result that is automatically valid for the 2-D case), then the paper appears in only *one* cell.

Table 4.1: The papers (presenting effective slip lengths) surveyed in this section, categorized into their applicable regimes.

SOME RESULTS FOR b_{eff}

	2-D Flow (1-D surface pattern)	**3-D Flow** (2-D surface pattern)	
No-slip/ Perfect-slip Binary Surface	J. R. Philip 1972 [44] Lauga and Stone 2003 [32] Ybert *et al* 2007 [64]	Ybert *et al* 2007 [64] Davis and Lauga 2009b [15] Ng and Wang 2010 [41] Davis and Lauga 2010 [17]	**FLAT SURFACE**
Other Surface	Cottin-Bizonne *et al* 2004 [11] Ybert *et al* 2007 [64] Hendy and Lund 2007 [22]	Tretheway and Meinhart 2004 [54, 55] Ybert *et al* 2007 [64] Lund and Hendy 2008 [35] Ng and Wang 2010 [41]	
No-slip/ Perfect-slip Binary Surface	Sbragaglia and Prosperetti 2007 [49] Ybert *et al* 2007 [64] Davis and Lauga 2009a [16]		**ROUGH SURFACE**
Other Surface	Einzel, Panzer, Liu 1990 [19] Ng and Wang 2009 [40] Lund *et al* 2012 [36]		

4.0.2 Categorizing Results by Mathematical Strength

As well as sorting the published b_{eff} results by the regime of applicability, we can sort them by the rigour of their derivation.

Mathematicians may describe a result as 'exact'. This usually means that it is in a form that can be written down as an explicit formula. The benefit of an exact result is practical: it can be evaluated more easily. Whether a result is exact or not is nothing to do with the rigour of its derivation; i.e. unrelated to the *strength* of the result.

In mathematics, a result is described as *strong* if *few assumptions* were made in its derivation. The fewer the assumptions, the 'stronger' the result. There are two benefits of a strong result: First, because it relies on fewer assumptions, it is likely to be more widely applicable. So 'strong' means 'more general'. Secondly, the fewer assumptions, the fewer modes of failure. Assumptions sometimes turn out to be false; this sad event may cause various results to be overturned. A strong result is more robust. It is less fragile to nasty surprises as the body of human knowledge grows. (Note that a strong result may have a long complicated derivation, and thus be vulnerable to errors in the derivation. The point is that a stronger result has a more *self contained* derivation.)

Obviously, in theoretical physics we would like our results to be as useful and trustworthy as possible — 'exact' and 'strong'. For the purposes of this literature review, we shall rank the published results using the following (somewhat arbitrary) labels.

- **Derived** Results. A relation for b_{eff} derived (mathematically) from the Stokes equation, an appropriate boundary condition, and perhaps an assumption of fluid incompressibility.

Other results:

- **Scaling Law** Results. May or may not include more assumptions than a Derived Result, but the result is not exact, giving b_{eff} only as a multiple of some other length scale.
- **Simplified** Results. Further simplifying assumptions have been made, from reasonable phenomenological models to mere hand waving.
- **Empirical** Results. Exact results that express a curve fitted to either numerical or experimental data. May be informed by stronger results.

There are comparatively fewer Derived Results. They are listed in Table 4.2. The other results are listed in Table 4.3.

Table 4.2: The papers surveyed here in which b_{eff} is rigorously derived from the Stokes equation and appropriate boundary conditions.

DERIVED RESULTS

	2-D Flow (1-D surface pattern)	**3-D Flow** (2-D surface pattern)	
No-slip/ Perfect-slip Binary Surface	J. R. Philip 1972 [44] Lauga and Stone 2003 [32]		**FLAT SURFACE**
Other Surface	Hendy and Lund 2007 [22]	Lund and Hendy 2008 [35]	
No-slip/ Perfect-slip Binary Surface	Sbragaglia and Prosperetti 2007 [49] Davis and Lauga 2009a [16]		**ROUGH SURFACE**
Other Surface	Einzel, Panzer, Liu 1990 [19] Lund *et al* 2012 [36]		

Table 4.3: The papers surveyed here in which b_{eff} is *not* derived from Stokes equation and boundary conditions, but instead from scaling law arguments, simplified models, curve fitting etc.

SCALING LAW, SIMPLIFIED AND NUMERICAL RESULTS

	2-D Flow (1-D surface pattern)	**3-D Flow** (2-D surface pattern)	
No-slip/ Perfect-slip Binary Surface	Ybert *et al* 2007 [64]	Ybert *et al* 2007 [64] Davis and Lauga 2009b [15] Ng and Wang 2010 [41] Davis and Lauga 2010 [17]	**FLAT SURFACE**
Other Surface	Cottin-Bizonne *et al* 2004 [11] Ybert *et al* 2007 [64]	Tretheway and Meinhart 2004 [54, 55] Ybert *et al* 2007 [64] Ng and Wang 2010 [41]	
No-slip/ Perfect-slip Binary Surface	Ybert *et al* 2007 [64]		**ROUGH SURFACE**
Other Surface	Ng and Wang 2009 [40]		

4.1 Derived Results

All results are for 2-dimensional flow (over a 1-dimensional surface pattern), unless otherwise noted.

4.1.1 Flat Surface, of No-Slip and Perfect-Slip Parallel Strips

J. R. Philip 1972

The first significant result was J. R. Philip's article in ZAMP in 1972 [44]. This comprehensive effort studied amongst other things "Shear Flow over a Plate with a Regular Array of Longitudinal No-Shear Slots". Note that perfect slip gives rise to the no-shear condition. The no-shear slots are parallel to the direction of flow, as shown in Figure (4.1). By "generalizing the device of Karush and Young", a conformal mapping in the complex plane, he proves that in the far field:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{L}{\pi} \ln \sec \frac{\pi}{2} \phi_{\text{slip}} \tag{4.1}$$

where L is the period of the array, and ϕ_{slip} is the fraction of the surface that has perfect slip. Part of this proof is replicated in Appendix B.

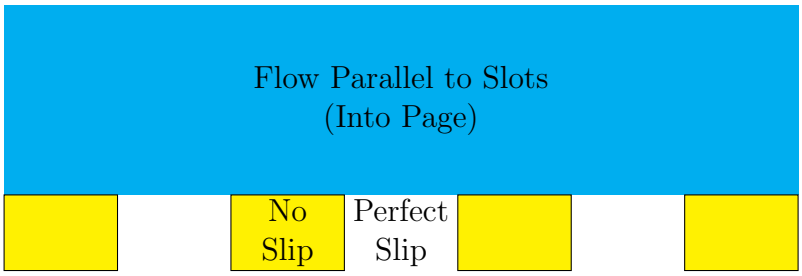


Figure 4.1: The no-slip/perfect-slip longitudinal flow system studied by J. R. Philip in 1972.

⋆

Lauga & Stone 2003

It wasn't until 2003 that the case for flow *transverse* to the slots was solved. This situation is shown in Figure (4.2). In an article in the Journal of Fluid Mechanics that year [32], Lauga and Stone study pressure-driven Stokes flow down a straight circular pipe. They note that there is no analytic solution for the transverse case. They derive dual series of equations, one for each boundary slip, which are simultaneously true. With ϕ_{slip} fixed, the asymptotic limit of the solutions to these equations as period $L \to 0$ is the far field flow, implying an effective slip length:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{2}\frac{L}{\pi} \ln \sec \frac{\pi}{2}\phi_{\text{slip}} \tag{4.2}$$

which is exactly half the solution for parallel slots.

They provide a physical interpretation for the factor of two: "... for a given velocity of the body in the fluid, an elongated body exerts twice as much force on the fluid when it is aligned perpendicularly to its direction of motion than when it is aligned parallel to it. As a consequence, for a given wall slip velocity ... the shear in the longitudinal case will be twice as large as the shear in the transverse case, and therefore [it is expected that] $b_{\text{eff},\parallel} = 2b_{\text{eff},\perp}$."

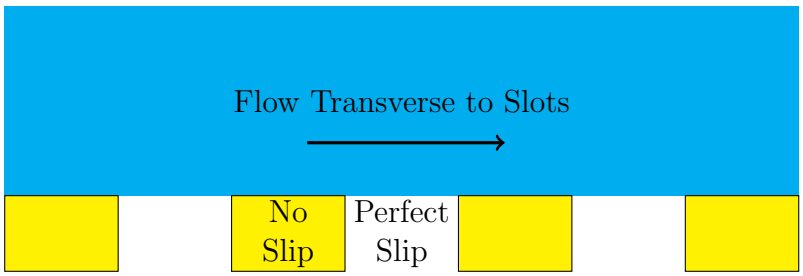


Figure 4.2: The no-slip/perfect-slip transverse flow system studied by Lauga and Stone.

4.1.2 Flat No-Slip and Curved Perfect-Slip Parallel Strips

SBRAGAGLIA & PROSPERETTI 2007

Philip's foundational solution had flat strips of perfect slip. Since these model a stress-free liquid-gas interface, it is reasonable to extend the model so that the perfect slip surface forms a slightly curved meniscus, as in Figure (4.3). In 2007, Sbragaglia and Prosperetti did exactly that [49]. Using a dual-series technique, (rather than conformal mapping), they replicate Philip's result, and add a perturbation due the the curved meniscus. They use as a small perturbation parameter:

$$\epsilon = \frac{1}{2\pi}\frac{L}{2R} \tag{4.3}$$

where R is the radius of curvature of the meniscus, and L is the period of the pattern. In the far field, the effective slip length is:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{L}{\pi}\ln\sec\frac{\pi}{2}\phi_{\text{slip}} - \frac{L^2}{4R}\phi_{\text{slip}}^3\int_0^1 \frac{[1-\cos(\pi\phi_{\text{slip}}s)](1-s^2)}{\cos(\pi\phi_{\text{slip}}s)-\cos(\pi\phi_{\text{slip}})}\,ds \tag{4.4}$$

They note that deformation of the meniscus *reduces* the slip length. "The physical origin of this phenomenon is due to the fact that, when the interface bows into the groove, the condition of free shear (perfect slip) is moved below the level $z = 0$ of the undisturbed surface so that, on $z = 0$, there is a residual nonzero stress."

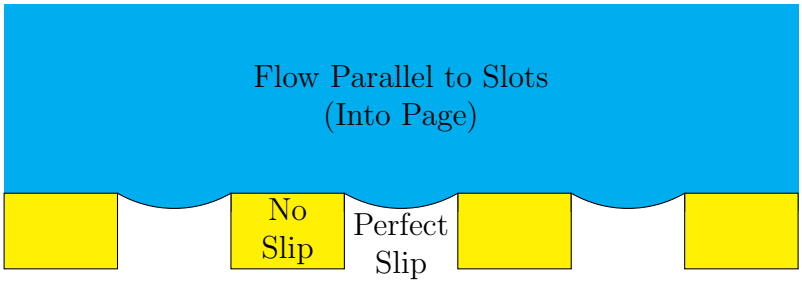


Figure 4.3: The no-slip/perfect-slip-meniscus longitudinal flow system studied by Sbragaglia and Prosperetti.

⋆

Davis & Lauga 2009a

Another variation is that the perfect-slip strips model a bubble type geometry, with the surface bulging up into the liquid. In a 2009 paper in Physics of Fluids, Davis and Lauga consider this scenario [16]. Their model is still 2-dimensional Stokes flow, so that the 'bubbles' can be considered to be the cross sections of spherical caps on top of channels full of air. Flow is thus transverse to the grating. The channels have width $2c$, and the greater the air pressure therein, the further the bubble cap protrudes into the liquid. The magnitude of protrusion is quantified by the angle θ that the bubble wall makes to the solid surface. See Figure (4.4).

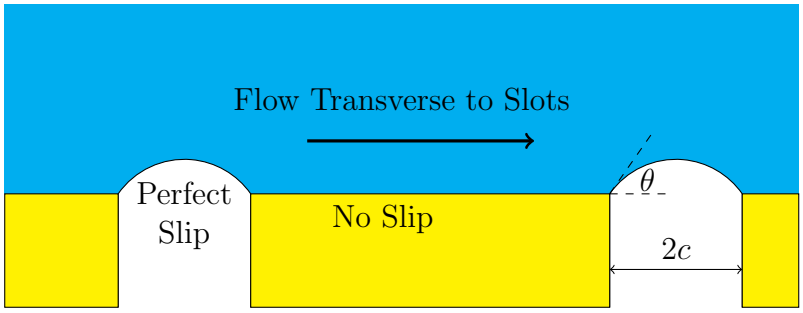


Figure 4.4: The no-slip/perfect-slip-bubble transverse flow system studied by Davis and Lauga.

In the dilute limit, i.e. bubbles sparsely distributed on the surface, the effective slip tends to:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = c\pi\phi_{\text{slip}} \int_0^\infty \frac{s}{\sinh 2s(\pi-\theta) + s\sin 2\theta} \left[\cos 2\theta + \frac{s\sin 2\theta\cosh s\pi + \sinh s(\pi-2\theta)}{\sinh s\pi}\right] ds \quad (4.5)$$

They evaluate for various values of θ, nondimensionalized by channel width. They find good agreement with the numerical results of Steinberger *et al* [51] and Hyväluoma and Harting [25].

"The main features of the full numerical results are seen to be reproduced by our analytical model. There exists a critical protrusion angle θ_c

above which the effect of the wall-attached bubbles displays a transition from reduced ($\theta < \theta_c$) to enhanced friction ($\theta > \theta_c$). Our model predicts $\theta \approx 65°$, in good agreement with the results of [Steinberger *et al*] ($\theta \approx 62°$) and [Hyväluoma and Harting] ($\theta \approx 69°$). "

4.1.3 Flat Surface, with Slip Length ≪≫ Period, Otherwise Arbitrary

Hendy & Lund 2007

In 2007, Hendy and Lund published in Phys. Rev. E [22] a perturbative analysis of the effective slip length of a flat surface with an intrinsic slip length $b(x)$ that varies over the surface with period L. $b(x)$ has a maximum, $b_{\max}$, and a minimum, $b_{\min}$. In the case where $L \ll b_{\min}$, the small parameter $\epsilon = L/b_{\min}$ expresses a perturbation of plug flow, and the effective slip length – to first order in ϵ – is the area-weighted harmonic mean of intrinsic slip lengths

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{4.6}$$

In the opposite case, where $b_{\max} \ll L$, the small parameter $\epsilon = b_{\max}/L$ expresses a perturbation of Couette flow, and the effective slip length is found to be the area-weighted mean of intrinsic slip lengths

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle \tag{4.7}$$

These expressions are approximations that get better as their relevant perturbation parameters get smaller.

3-D Flow

Lund & Hendy 2008

In 2008, we published in ANZIAM Journal [35] a similar perturbation analysis that extended the above results to 3-dimensional flow over a flat surface with a square-periodic variation in intrinsic slip length, $b(x, y)$. The period in the x direction is L. If plug flow is perturbed, with perturbation

parameter $\epsilon = L/b_{\min}$, again the effective slip length is the area-weighted harmonic mean of $b(x, y)$:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{4.8}$$

And if Couette flow is perturbed, with small parameter $b_{\max} \ll L$, the effective slip length is the area-weighted mean of $b(x, y)$:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle \tag{4.9}$$

These published results subsume our published results from the previous year. They are presented in Chapter 7.

4.1.4 Rough Surface, with Slip Length ≫ Period, Otherwise Arbitrary

Lund *et al* 2012

Using a completely different technique — homogenization — we have proved that for flow over a *rough* surface with a slip length varying with the same period L as the roughness, with the minimum slip length much greater than L,

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1+s^2}}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{4.10}$$

This is the harmonic mean weighted by *area of contact* between surface and fluid — not just footprint area. (s is the slope and $\sqrt{1+s^2}$ is the arc length.) For a flat surface, this reduces to our previous perturbative result.

This proof was published in Phys. Rev. E in 2012 [36]. It is the centrepiece of this thesis, and is presented fully in Chapter 6.

4.1.5 Rough Surface of Single Intrinsic Slip

Einzel, Panzer & Liu 1990

Finally, there is an interesting result for a *rough* surface with a *single* unchanging intrinsic slip length. In 1990 Einzel, Panzer and Liu [19] studied

a 'weakly varying surface' of the form

$$y(x) = \sum_n \left[h_n^{\cos} \cos(nkx) + h_n^{\sin} \sin(nkx) \right] \tag{4.11}$$

This Fourier surface has a **single** intrinsic slip length b_0. In the 'stick' limit, $kb_0 \ll 1$, the effective slip length is:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = b_0 - \sum_n nk \left[(h_n^{\cos})^2 + (h_n^{\sin})^2 \right] \tag{4.12}$$

More interestingly, in the limit of perfect slip, $kb_0 \gg 1$, they get

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left[\frac{1}{b_0} + \sum_n (nk)^3 \left[(h_n^{\cos})^2 + (h_n^{\sin})^2 \right] \right]^{-1} \tag{4.13}$$

They get a very similar result for incommensurate sine waves, so the result holds for pseudo-random roughness.

For clarity, we can apply this to simple sinusoidal surface chosen such that the wave number k is the inverse of the amplitude h. Then the 'stick' limit $kb_0 \ll 1$ is the case $b \ll L$, and

$$b_{\text{eff}} = b_0 - h \to -h \quad \text{as} \quad b_0 \to 0 \tag{4.14}$$

And the perfect slip limit $kb_0 \gg 1$ is the case $L \ll b$ and

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left[\frac{1}{b_0} + \frac{1}{h} \right]^{-1} \to h \quad \text{as} \quad b_0 \to \infty \tag{4.15}$$

The interesting point is that even if a rough surface has *perfect slip* i.e. infinite slip length, the effective slip length of Einzel, Panzer and Liu is still finite, because of the roughness. By contrast, our harmonic mean formula with a single slip length b_0 reduces to

$$b_{\text{eff}} = b_0 \left\langle \sqrt{1 + s^2} \right\rangle^{-1} \to \infty \quad \text{as} \quad b_0 \to \infty \tag{4.16}$$

4.2 Simplified Models, Scaling Laws and Numerics

4.2.1 Models with Simplifying Assumptions

Tretheway & Meinhart 2004

In 2004, Tretheway and Meinhart [54] consider a variation of the binary surface wherein the gas-liquid interface has some large finite slip length, rather than an infinite slip length. Piecing together the paper and an Erratum [55] published 2 years later, one finds they claim that the intrinsic slip length for water of thickness $2D$ flowing over a rarefied gas layer of thickness δ is:

$$b_{\text{slip}} = \frac{1}{2D}\left(\frac{\mu_{water}}{\mu_{air}}\right)\left[2D\delta + \delta^2 + \epsilon(4D + 2\delta)\right] \tag{4.17}$$

where ϵ is the slip length of the rarefied gas slipping over the solid. b_{slip} is derived from a velocity equation u_{slip}. They combine this with the standard no-slip velocity equation (Couette flow): "We combine the slip and no-slip [velocity] equations in a weighted average and calculate the cumulative velocity, $u_{\text{cu.}}$, by

$$u_{\text{cu.}} = \phi u_{\text{slip}} + (1 - \phi)u_{\text{no-slip}} \tag{4.18}$$

where ϕ is the fraction covered by gas. ..., we set the cumulative velocity at the air-water interface equal to the slip length times the shear rate at the air-water interface to obtain an equation for slip length ..."

$$b_{\text{cu.}} = \phi\frac{1}{2D}\left(\frac{\mu_{water}}{\mu_{air}}\right)\left[2D\delta + \delta^2 + \epsilon(4D + 2\delta)\right] \tag{4.19}$$

And that is the end of their analysis. However, the observant reader may notice that

$$b_{\text{cu.}} = \phi b_{\text{slip}} \tag{4.20}$$

Perhaps due to the inconsistent notation of a derivation spread over a paper and an erratum published two years later, Tretheway and Meinhart do not mention this. Furthermore, a careful reading seems to reveal that $\partial_z u_{\text{slip}} =$

$\partial_z u_{\mathrm{no-slip}} = \dot{\gamma}$. If the shear rate indeed does not depend on the local slip length, we can think about a binary surface with local slip lengths defined via $u_{\mathrm{slip}} = b_{\mathrm{slip}}\dot{\gamma}$ and $u_{\mathrm{low-slip}} = b_{\mathrm{low-slip}}\dot{\gamma}$. Then one can show that a corollary of the definition of $u_{\mathrm{cu.}}$ given above is that $b_{\mathrm{cu.}} = \langle b \rangle$.

Tretheway and Meinhart do not give any more explanation of cumulative velocity than the quote above; nor of cumulative slip length. If we interpret the cumulative slip length as a candidate for an effective slip length, then the argument in the paper would be essentially as follows: The slip length of fluid over a gas cavity, b_{slip}, is found. Consider a binary surface with area fraction ϕ having slip length b_{slip}, and the remainder having $b = 0$. Assume $b_{\mathrm{eff}} = \langle b \rangle$. Then $b_{\mathrm{eff}} = \phi b_{\mathrm{slip}}$.

$\star$

Cottin-Bizonne *et al* 2004

The harmonic mean formula for effective slip makes its first appearance (to the best of our knowledge) in a landmark article in Eur. Phys. Journal E in 2004 by Cecile Cottin-Bizonne *et al* [11]. The formula arises in the discussion of molecular dynamics (MD) simulations, which are the basis of the paper. Cottin-Bizonne and colleagues presented MD fluid simulations in which they observed the 'dewetting transition', wherein the liquid sits on top of posts, giving a large effective slip length. They do some numerical calculations to predict the effective slip length in various regimes.

For the regime of **No-slip/Perfect-slip** strips, they find excellent agreement with the analytic results of J. R. Philip [44] and Lauga and Stone [32]. Now confident in their technique, they investigate other regimes.

For strips of **No-slip and Partial-slip** material, they find that b_{eff} is fixed by the smaller of the two lengths, b_{slip} and the period L.

- For low slip ($b_{\mathrm{slip}} < L$), b_{eff} increases linearly, roughly $b_{\mathrm{eff}} = b_{\mathrm{slip}}/4$
- For high slip ($b_{\mathrm{slip}} > 10L$), b_{eff} asymptotes to a fraction of L. Roughly $L/10$ for flow parallel to stripes, and $L/20$ for transverse flow.

For stripes of **Partial-slip and Perfect-slip** material, they find that b_{eff} is determined by the *larger* of b_{slip} and period L.

- For small slip ($b_{\text{slip}} \ll L$), b_{eff} is fixed by the period L.
- For high slip ($b_{\text{slip}} > L$), b_{eff} increases linearly with intrinsic slip.

They advance a 'simple phenomenological model' to explain this linearity:

"We introduce the interfacial friction coefficient λ, defined by ... the continuity of the tangential stress σ_s at the solid-liquid interface:

$$\sigma_s = \eta \frac{\partial V}{\partial z} = \lambda V_s \tag{4.21}$$

where η is the viscosity of the liquid and V_s [is the slip velocity]. The interfacial friction coefficient λ is then related to the slip length b by

$$\lambda = \frac{\eta}{b} \tag{4.22}$$

The effective friction coefficient $\Lambda = \frac{\eta}{b_{\text{eff}}}$ can be interpreted as the *averaged friction* over the different stripes, and we obtain, accordingly, the following result for the effective macroscopic slip length as a function of the microscopic ones:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left[\phi \frac{1}{b_{\text{high}}} + (1-\phi) \frac{1}{b_{\text{low}}} \right]^{-1} \tag{4.23}$$

which is similar to the addition rule for resistors in parallel.

In the case $b_{\text{high}} \to \infty$, we expect

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{b_{\text{low}}}{1-\phi} \text{ "} \tag{4.24}$$

Cottin-Bizonne *et al* note "It is important to emphasize that its validity is limited to the case where both the slip lengths, b_{high} and b_{low}, are larger than the roughness periodicity L. Note, however, that in practice, this relationship is valid down to $b_{\text{low}} > 0.1L$."

To the best of our knowledge, this is the first assertion that b_{eff} is the harmonic mean of intrinsic slip lengths. This result inspired this thesis, which provides a rigorous derivation and extension of this harmonic mean formula.

Ng & Wang 2009

In 2009, Ng and Wang [40] considered flow over the familiar binary surface of flat perfect-slip/partial-slip regions, with one difference: the perfect-slip gas-liquid interface was allowed to be some distance d below the solid surface. They did numerical evaluations of flow both parallel and transverse to the resulting 'step function profile' surface. They compare their numerics with the continuum modeling results of Cottin-Bizonne *et al.* 2004 [11], and find essentially perfect agreement.

However, their most interesting observation relates to the conventional completely flat binary surface. They recall Cottin-Bizonne's proposal for b_{eff} for flow parallel to the strips:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{b_{\text{solid}}}{1-\phi} \tag{4.25}$$

which works very well for large b_{solid}. Ng and Wang have discovered that this is much improved by simply adding on J. Philip's exact result [44] for $b_{\text{solid}} = 0$:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{L}{\pi} \ln\left[\sec\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\phi\right)\right] + \frac{b_{\text{solid}}}{1-\phi} \tag{4.26}$$

And similarly, for transverse flow, add on the exact solution of Lauga and Stone [32]

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{1}{2}\frac{L}{\pi} \ln\left[\sec\left(\frac{\pi}{2}\phi\right)\right] + \frac{b_{\text{solid}}}{1-\phi} \tag{4.27}$$

Ng and Wang test these extended formulae numerically, and find that they give a maximum error of 3% – 6%, compared with Cottin-Bizonne's original formula which can have a maximum error of more than 50% for small b_{solid}.

4.2.2 The Scaling Laws of Ybert *et al*

YBERT *et al* 2007

Possibly the highest-profile article relating to effective slip length is the 2007 article in Physics of Fluids by Ybert and coworkers, entitled "Achieving large slip with superhydrophobic surfaces: Scaling laws for generic geometries" [64]. The authors form a research group at Lyon, France, which includes Cecile Cottin-Bizonne. Hence, the paper makes the same assumptions as the 'phenomenological model' of Cottin-Bizonne 2004 [11], and takes them in a slightly different direction, to get scaling laws for various geometries. The paper is sufficiently influential, and the derivation sufficiently instructive, that we essentially reproduce it here.

At the heart of the model is the concept of stress balance. Consider the stress on a plane of infinitesimal area located on the fluid boundary. The stresses are illustrated in Figure (4.5).

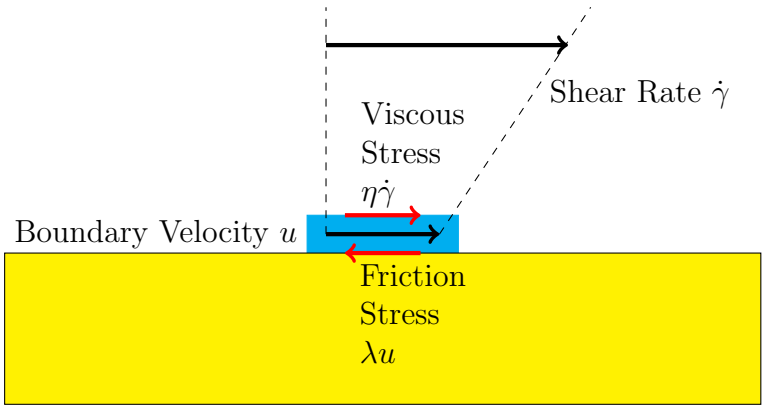


Figure 4.5: The balanced stresses on a fluid element at the boundary.

At equilibrium, the stresses balance:

$$\sigma = \eta\dot{\gamma} = \lambda u \tag{4.28}$$

If the stress balance is assumed to always hold locally – at any infinitesimal plane, then the *average* stresses over the entire surface (or over one period)

must balance:

$$\langle \sigma \rangle = \langle \eta \dot{\gamma} \rangle = \langle \lambda u \rangle \tag{4.29}$$

Now the viscosity η can be considered constant throughout the fluid, so that $\langle \eta \dot{\gamma} \rangle = \eta \langle \dot{\gamma} \rangle$. But the friction coefficient λ is not constant. Therefore, Ybert *et al* define an effective friction coefficient such that:

$$\langle \lambda u \rangle = \lambda_{\text{eff}} \langle u \rangle \tag{4.30}$$

$$\text{But then of course} \quad \eta \langle \dot{\gamma} \rangle = \lambda_{\text{eff}} \langle u \rangle \quad \text{rearranges to} \quad \langle u \rangle = \frac{\eta}{\lambda_{\text{eff}}} \langle \dot{\gamma} \rangle \tag{4.31}$$

which defines some kind of effective slip length:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{\eta}{\lambda_{\text{eff}}} \tag{4.32}$$

This definition of b_{eff} relates the *area average* boundary velocity to the *area average* of the shear rate at the boundary.

$$\langle u \rangle = b_{\text{eff}} \langle \dot{\gamma} \rangle \tag{4.33}$$

Note that the variations in boundary velocity and shear rate decay with height, so that sufficiently far above the surface there is a uniform velocity and shear rate, from which our far-field effective slip length can be inferred. If the decay process (due to momentum diffusion) is equivalent to the simple averaging done here, then the b_{eff} of Ybert *et al* will be identical to our preferred far-field definition of b_{eff}. But we cannot assume this.

2-D Flow over Perfect-slip/No-slip Surface

It is assumed that the average stress on a binary surface can be decomposed into the area-weighted averages of the 'subaverages' of stress over the liquid-gas interface and the liquid-solid interface:

Then

$$\langle \sigma \rangle = \phi \langle \sigma_{\text{gas}} \rangle + \phi_{\text{solid}} \langle \sigma_{\text{solid}} \rangle \tag{4.34}$$

If the gas-liquid interface is considered to be perfect-slip or *no-shear*, there is no stress; $\sigma_{\text{gas}} = 0$. Hence

$$\langle \sigma \rangle = \phi_{\text{solid}} \langle \sigma_{\text{solid}} \rangle \tag{4.35}$$

$$\text{Viscosity } \eta \text{ is constant, so} \quad \langle \sigma_{\text{solid}} \rangle = \eta \langle \dot{\gamma}_{\text{solid}} \rangle \tag{4.36}$$

$$\text{For flow over a flat surface, 'simple shear' obtains:} \quad \dot{\gamma}_{\text{solid}} = \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} \tag{4.37}$$

So

$$\langle \sigma_{\text{solid}} \rangle = \eta \left\langle \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} \right\rangle \tag{4.38}$$

Case where $\phi_{\text{solid}} \to 0$, Mostly Plug-like flow.

The flow is mostly plug-like, with some characteristic velocity U. The only place that it is not plug-like is in the vicinity of the post. The fluid sticks to the top of the post (no-slip), perturbing the plug-like flow. The perturbed region extends some (arbitrary) distance d above the post, at which point the velocity is (arbitrarily) close to U again. This is shown in the diagram of Figure (4.6).

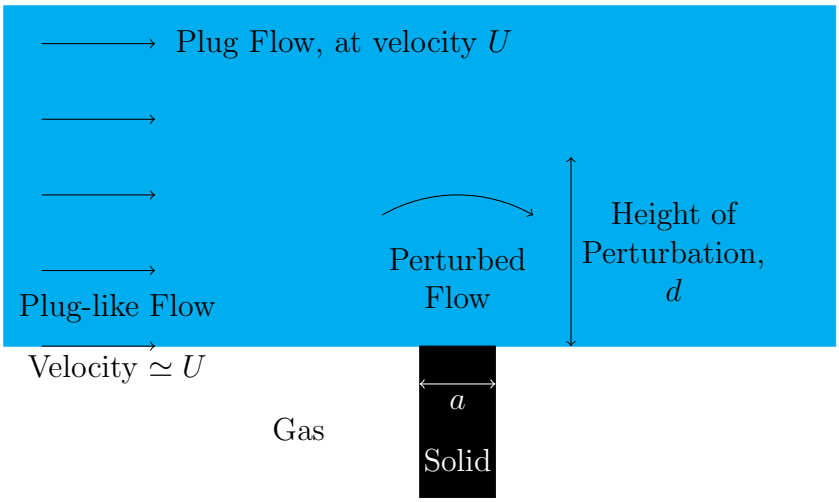


Figure 4.6: Plug flow perturbed by a no-slip post of width a.

Thus, the velocity changes from 0 to U in distance d. The geometry in Figure (4.7) illustrates that the average velocity gradient is therefore

$$\left\langle \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} \right\rangle = \frac{U}{d} \tag{4.39}$$

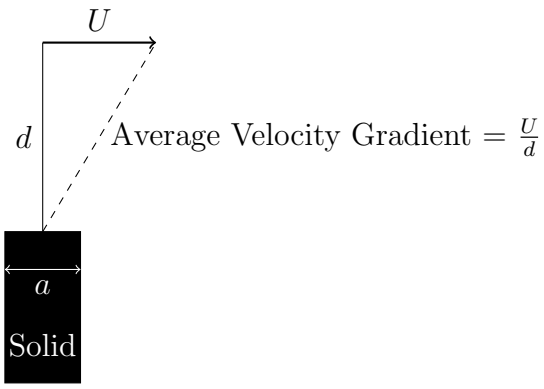


Figure 4.7: The geometry of the average velocity gradient of the perturbation.

Now, d scales as a. This is shown by dimensional analysis using the Buckingham Pi theorem in Appendix C.

Hence,

$$\left\langle \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} \right\rangle \sim \frac{U}{a} \tag{4.40}$$

Thus,

$$\langle \sigma_{\text{solid}} \rangle \sim \eta \frac{U}{a} \tag{4.41}$$

and

$$\langle \sigma \rangle \sim \phi_{\text{solid}} \eta \frac{U}{a} \tag{4.42}$$

In plug-like flow most of the fluid at the boundary is moving at the characteristic velocity U. So

$$\langle u \rangle \simeq U \tag{4.43}$$

Thus we have

$$\eta \langle \dot{\gamma} \rangle = \langle \sigma \rangle \sim \frac{\phi_{\text{solid}} \eta}{a} \langle u \rangle \tag{4.44}$$

simplifying to:

$$\langle u \rangle \sim \frac{a}{\phi_{\text{solid}}} \langle \dot{\gamma} \rangle \tag{4.45}$$

defining

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim \frac{a}{\phi_{\text{solid}}} \tag{4.46}$$

Thus in the limit of small solid fraction ϕ_{solid}, Ybert *et al* argue that

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim \alpha \frac{a}{\phi_{\text{solid}}} \tag{4.47}$$

where α is a prefactor that depends on the geometry of the surface. This is the main result of Ybert *et al* 2007 [64].

Other Results

Ybert *et al* compare this scaling law with the exact result of J. R. Philip [44]. For the striped surface in question, $\phi_{\text{solid}} = a/L$, so the scaling law is:

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim L \tag{4.48}$$

They note that in the limit of small ϕ_{solid}, Philip's exact solution is similar, having only logarithmic dependence on ϕ_{solid}: $b_{\text{eff}} \sim L \log \phi_{\text{solid}}$

If the surface is a forest of nanopillars, $\phi_{\text{solid}} = (a/L)^2$, so the scaling law is:

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim \frac{a}{\sqrt{\phi_{\text{solid}}}} \tag{4.49}$$

Finally, if the no-slip condition is relaxed and some finite slip length b_s holds on the solid post, the scaling law is modified: "Going back to the above derivation ... in the limit $\phi_{\text{solid}} \to 0$, one expects that a finite slip length on the solid will reduce the shear rate over the solid regions: $\langle \partial u/\partial z \rangle \sim U/(a + b_s)$. The averaged shear stress over the total surface now reads $\langle \sigma \rangle = \phi_{\text{solid}} \eta U/(a + b_s)$. One gets accordingly ..."

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim \frac{a + b_s}{\phi_{\text{solid}}} \tag{4.50}$$

For completeness, they consider the case of vanishing gas area. Flow over a surface with very narrow gas gaps of width l will be close to Couette flow, with:

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim l(1 - \phi_{\text{solid}}) \tag{4.51}$$

4.2.3 Numerics

Ng & Wang 2009

As already mentioned, Ng and Wang in 2009 [40] did numerical studies of flow over a grating, in both parallel and transverse orientations. They derive eigenfunction expansions of the flow solutions, which are solved numerically. The effective slip lengths extracted have essentially perfect agreement with the continuum modeling of Cottin-Bizonne 2004 [11].

⋆

Davis & Lauga 2009b

In their second paper of 2009 [15], Davis and Lauga consider Stokes flow over a mesh of thin wires or strips, with large square air gaps in between. The surface is considered to be flat, with no-slip on the strips, and perfect-slip on the liquid-air interface. The period of the square-periodic mesh is L, and the width of the strips is ϵL. See Figure (4.8).

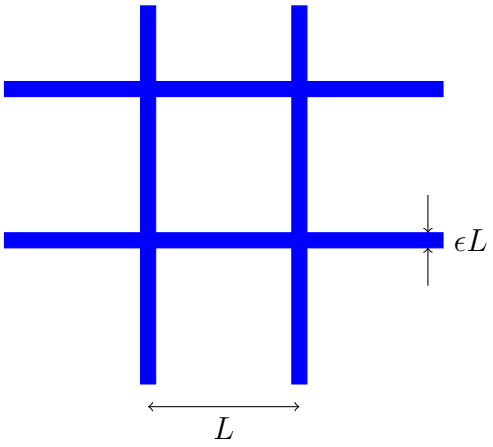


Figure 4.8: Top view of the mesh of no-slip strips and perfect-slip squares.

Davis and Lauga use a method of superposition of singularities, and end up with an infinite system of linear equations. Then $b_{\text{eff}} = L/\pi(A_0 + B_0)$ where A_0 and B_0 are the zeroth-order coefficients of the system of equations.

They solve numerically for A_0 and B_0 by truncating the infinite system

at N equations. (Truncating at $N = 1000$ rather than $N = 100$ changed the computed b_{eff} by less than 0.01%.) After computing b_{eff} for various values of ϵ, they derive a least-squares fit formula:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = -0.107L \ln \phi_{\text{solid}} + 0.003L \tag{4.52}$$

Finally, they offer 'simple estimates' – solutions from truncating the infinite series at $N = 1$ and $N = 2$ terms. For $N = 1$:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{L}{3\pi} \ln\left(\frac{2}{\pi\epsilon}\right) \tag{4.53}$$

The simple estimate for $N = 2$ is more complicated. These simple estimates overestimate b_{eff} by up to 10%, but converge on the correct result as $\epsilon \to 0$.

4.2.4 Coefficients Evaluated for Ybert's Scaling Laws

The influential scaling law paper by Ybert *et al* [64] inspired researchers to find the relevant coefficients by numerical or approximate methods.

Ng & Wang 2010

In 2010, Ng and Wang [41] continued their approach of numerically solving eigenfunction expansions, to find the scaling coefficients.

For flow over superhydrophobic surfaces, with the solid posts occupying a small area fraction, Ybert had proposed:

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim \frac{1}{\sqrt{\phi_{\text{solid}}}} \tag{4.54}$$

From their numerical data, Ng and Wang fit the parameters:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{0.34}{\sqrt{\phi_{\text{solid}}}} - 0.468 \quad \text{for circular posts,} \tag{4.55}$$

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{0.33}{\sqrt{\phi_{\text{solid}}}} - 0.461 \quad \text{for square posts.} \tag{4.56}$$

And other parameters for other regimes. Ng and Wang present numerically fitted parameters for the nanobubble case ($\phi_{\text{solid}} \to 1$), for cases with

finite slip on the solid, and for cases where the geometry is elliptical or rectangular rather than simply circular or square.

⋆

Davis & Lauga 2010

In 2010, Davis and Lauga [17] studied Stokes flow over a superhydrophobic surface comprising a rectangular array of circular posts, each of radius a, as in the diagram of Figure (4.9).

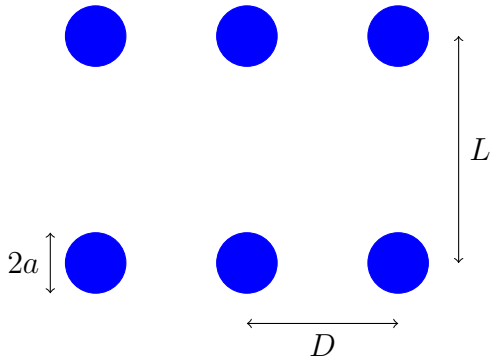


Figure 4.9: Top view of rectangular array of circular posts.

As their point of departure, they take the scaling law proposed in Ybert *et al* 2007 for the limit of small ϕ_{solid}:

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim \frac{A}{\sqrt{\phi_{\text{solid}}}} L - BL \tag{4.57}$$

"By asymptotically considering the case of low solid fraction, ϕ_{solid}, we mathematically derive the scaling coefficients A and B governing (4.57), thereby predicting analytically the effective surface-slip length." The asymptotic estimate of the coefficients yields:

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim \frac{3}{16}\sqrt{\frac{\pi}{\phi_{\text{solid}}}}\sqrt{DL} \tag{4.58}$$

If the array is square, this reduces to:

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim \frac{3}{16}\sqrt{\frac{\pi}{\phi_{\text{solid}}}} L \tag{4.59}$$

Adding the next-order correction term gives (for the square array):

$$b_{\text{eff}} \sim \frac{3}{16}\sqrt{\frac{\pi}{\phi_{\text{solid}}}}L - \frac{3}{2\pi}\ln(1+\sqrt{2})L \tag{4.60}$$

in the limit of low ϕ_{solid}.

They compare their analytical asymptotic estimate with previous numerical work: "The quantitative agreement between our model and previous numerical work is remarkable... we find that the error between our simple model, and numerics of Ng and Wang (2010) [41] is about 1.8%, while the error between our model and the computations of Ybert *et al* (2007) [64] is about 3.9%."

4.3 Conclusion

There exists only on the order of a dozen expressions for the effective slip length of a mixed-slip surface. Only a handful of them are exact results that have been rigorously derived, and these results apply only in certain limits. These include the seminal work of J. R. Philip in 1972 [44], and the work of Lauga and Stone in 2003 [32], which assume binary surfaces of no-slip and *perfect-slip* material. Our own recent papers [22, 35, 36], which form the core of this thesis, contain results that apply when the intrinsic slip length is much larger or much smaller than the length scales of the fluid flow.

A simple phenomenological model was proposed by the Lyon group in the paper by Cottin-Bizonne *et al* [11], leading to the suggestion that

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{4.61}$$

This thesis provides a rigorous derivation of this empirically derived result and extends it to the case of rough surfaces. The same model inspired the derivation of several scaling laws, which appear in the highly influential paper of 2007 by Ybert *et al* [64].

The scaling laws have been refined by various researchers, by finding appropriate coefficients via numerical or approximate methods.

Chapter 5

The Mathematical Model

We are preparing to derive an expression for the effective slip length of a rough, mixed-slip surface. To begin, we translate the physical problem into the precise language of mathematics. That is, we construct a mathematical model that maps to the essential features of physical reality. The construction of the mathematical model is the focus of this chapter.

5.0.1 Mathematical Preliminaries

The differing needs of the maths, physics and engineering communities can cause irritating inconsistencies in notation and nomenclature. Being at the intersection of maths, physics and engineering, fluid mechanics is particularly prone to this. Thus, it is necessary to define terms before ploughing into the derivation. Disclaimer: the following language and notation may not be 'standard', but they follow the conventions of the (rigorous) textbooks of C. Pozrikidis [46, 47].

We begin by defining the Fréchet derivative – this is important, because more than one definition is in use. This makes it easy to then define the velocity gradient tensor, which behaves in a manner very similar to the Fréchet derivative.

The Fréchet Derivative

The Fréchet derivative is a generalization of the familiar derivative of a function of one real variable, to the more abstract 'functions on Banach spaces'. Happily, for finite-dimensional spaces, it is in fact the Jacobian matrix.

Consider a vector field in $\mathbb{R}^2$, with Cartesian coordinates. At each point x, y in space there is a vector $\vec{u} = (u, v)$, with u and v depending on x and y so that $\vec{u} = (u(x, y), v(x, y))$. Then $\vec{u}$ can be considered a vector valued function on $\mathbb{R}^2$, with Jacobian matrix:

$$D\vec{u} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & \frac{\partial u}{\partial y} \\ \frac{\partial v}{\partial x} & \frac{\partial v}{\partial y} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \partial_x u & \partial_y u \\ \partial_x v & \partial_y v \end{bmatrix} \tag{5.1}$$

The Fréchet derivative is a *spatial* derivative of a vector. It gives the change in a vector field as one moves from point $\vec{x_0} = (x_0, y_0)$ in the direction $\vec{a}$. The vector at point $\vec{x}_0$ is $\vec{u}(\vec{x}_0)$. What is the vector at a point a short distance $\vec{a}$ away? It is approximately $\vec{u}(\vec{x}_0)$ plus a correction $D\vec{u} \cdot \vec{a}$ that depends on $\vec{a}$:

$$\vec{u}(\vec{x}_0 + \vec{a}) \simeq \vec{u}(\vec{x}_0) + D\vec{u} \cdot \vec{a} \tag{5.2}$$

See Figure (5.1). The approximation becomes exact as the magnitude of $\vec{a}$ tends to zero.

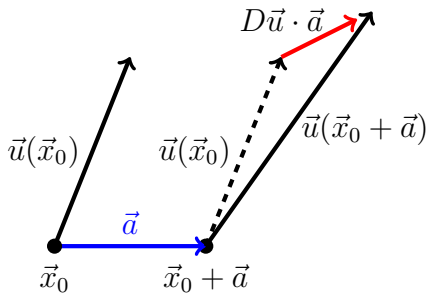


Figure 5.1: The action of the Fréchet derivative in $\mathbb{R}^2$.

The correction vector $D\vec{u} \cdot \vec{a}$ is the tensor dot product of the Fréchet

derivative with the vector $\vec{a}$. The tensor dot product is defined as

$$\vec{b} = T \cdot \vec{a}, \quad b_i = T_{ij} a_j \tag{5.3}$$

which is the same as the familiar matrix multiplication of a vector:

$$D\vec{u} \cdot \vec{a} = \begin{bmatrix} \partial_x u & \partial_y u \\ \partial_x v & \partial_y v \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} a_x \\ a_y \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} (\partial_x u)a_x + (\partial_y u)a_y \\ (\partial_x v)a_x + (\partial_y v)a_y \end{bmatrix} \tag{5.4}$$

$D\vec{u} \cdot \vec{a}$ is known as the directional derivative of $\vec{u}$ in the direction $\vec{a}$.

The Velocity Gradient Tensor

If the vector field is a *velocity* vector field $\vec{u}$, then it is convenient to work with the **velocity gradient tensor**, denoted $\nabla\vec{u}$. This is the transpose of the Fréchet derivative of the velocity field:

$$\nabla\vec{u} = D\vec{u}^T = \begin{bmatrix} \partial_x u & \partial_x v \\ \partial_y u & \partial_y v \end{bmatrix} \tag{5.5}$$

This provides a linear approximation to the flow field in the vicinity of $\vec{x}_0$ via:

$$\vec{u}(\vec{x}) \simeq \vec{u}(\vec{x}_0) + (\vec{x} - \vec{x}_0) \cdot \nabla\vec{u} \tag{5.6}$$

This is illustrated in Figure (5.2).

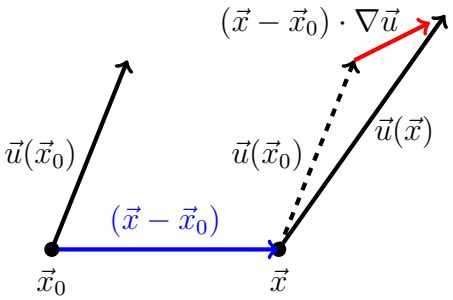


Figure 5.2: The action of the velocity gradient tensor.

An advantage of this convention is that the tensor dot product

$$\vec{b} = \vec{a} \cdot T = T^T \cdot \vec{a}, \quad b_i = a_j T_{ji} \tag{5.7}$$

allows the notation to follow the form of the familiar one-dimensional case:

$$f(x) \simeq f(x_0) + (x - x_0)\frac{df}{dx}$$

An interesting question: how does a vector change in the direction of *the vector itself?* This vector 'self gradient' looks like:

$$\vec{u} \cdot \nabla \vec{u} = \begin{bmatrix} u & v \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \partial_x u & \partial_x v \\ \partial_y u & \partial_y v \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} u\partial_x u + v\partial_y u \\ u\partial_x v + v\partial_y v \end{bmatrix} \tag{5.8}$$

Compare this with the **advection operator** $(\vec{u}\cdot\nabla) = u\partial_x + v\partial_y$, operating on vector $\vec{u}$:

$$(\vec{u} \cdot \nabla)\vec{u} = (u\partial_x + v\partial_y) \begin{bmatrix} u \\ v \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} u\partial_x u + v\partial_y u \\ u\partial_x v + v\partial_y v \end{bmatrix} \tag{5.9}$$

We see that they are the same. The advection operator usually appears in the derivation of the 'material derivative'. This alternative derivation via the velocity gradient tensor provides the useful intuition that the advection operator simply gives the change in a vector as one travels in *the direction of the vector itself.*

5.1 Modeling the Bulk Fluid: Navier Stokes

Fluid is composed of molecules, and the macroscopically observable properties of fluid emerge from the statistical mechanics of *ensembles* of molecules. Various properties of fluids are described by *continuous* mathematical functions. Thus, the value of the function at point $\vec{x}$ in a fluid is to be thought of as the statistical mechanical quantity emergent from the ensemble of molecules contained in an infinitesimal *fluid element* located at point $\vec{x}$. The element – for clarity, consider it a cube – is large enough to provide satisfactory statistics for the emergent quantity, but small enough that the continuum approximation is still sound.

Density

The density ρ of a fluid is the mass per unit volume of an infinitesimal fluid element. It is a scalar quantity that may vary if the fluid is compressible.

Velocity

The velocities of the ensemble of molecules in an infinitesimal element can be averaged to define the fluid velocity at that point. This is true of any point, so the fluid velocity field is a continuous vector-valued function on the fluid. An example is shown in Figure (5.3).

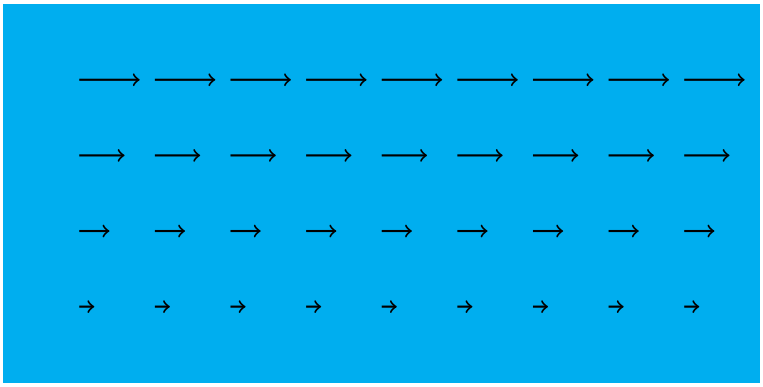


Figure 5.3: A bulk of fluid with a velocity vector field.

5.1.1 Incompressible Liquid

For a vector field, a **flux** can be defined. If the fluid is an incompressible liquid, then the flux into a volume element will exactly equal the flux out of the volume element. This is expressed in the mathematical model by stating that the divergence of the velocity vector field is zero everywhere:

$$\nabla \cdot \vec{u} = 0 \tag{5.10}$$

Incompressibility is a good approximation for liquids, and also turns out to be very mathematically convenient.

Pressure

The pressure p is a scalar function defined as the force per unit area acting on an arbitrarily oriented plane moving with the fluid. A pressure gradient in the fluid means that the pressure on one side of a fluid element is higher than on the other side. This may cause a net force on the fluid element which tends to accelerate it, as suggested in Figure (5.4).

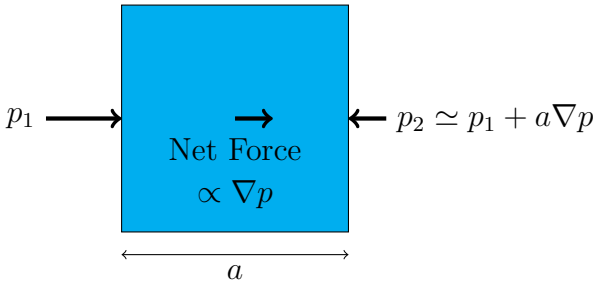


Figure 5.4: A pressure gradient tends to accelerate a fluid element.

5.1.2 Incompressible Viscous Newtonian Fluid

Interesting fluids have a *viscosity*, μ, an internal friction that allows velocity to propagate through the fluid. At a molecular level, molecules from a fast fluid element diffuse into an adjacent slower fluid element, and vice versa. This diffusion of momentum tends to equalise the velocities of adjacent elements. Thus, viscosity acts with velocity gradients to cause *stresses* on a fluid element caused by the differing velocities of adjacent fluid elements. If the stresses are balanced, the element will not tend to accelerate, as suggested in Figure (5.5).

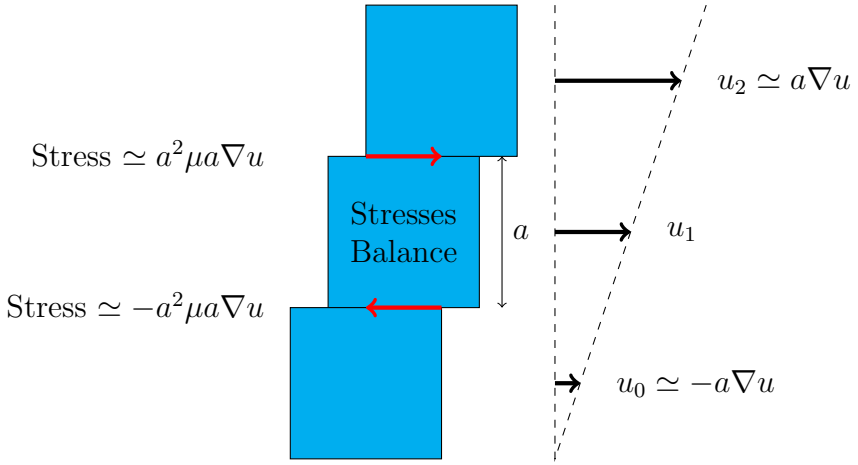


Figure 5.5: Fluid element at equilibrium with viscous stresses balanced.

The velocity gradient gives a linear approximation to the local flow field; the linearity means that the velocity differences on opposite sides of a fluid element will be equal and opposite. However, the next level of accuracy is a quadratic approximation using the second derivative of velocity, the Laplacian $\nabla^2 u$. With the quadratic approximation, there can be a net viscous stress on the fluid element, tending to accelerate it. This is shown in Figure (5.6).

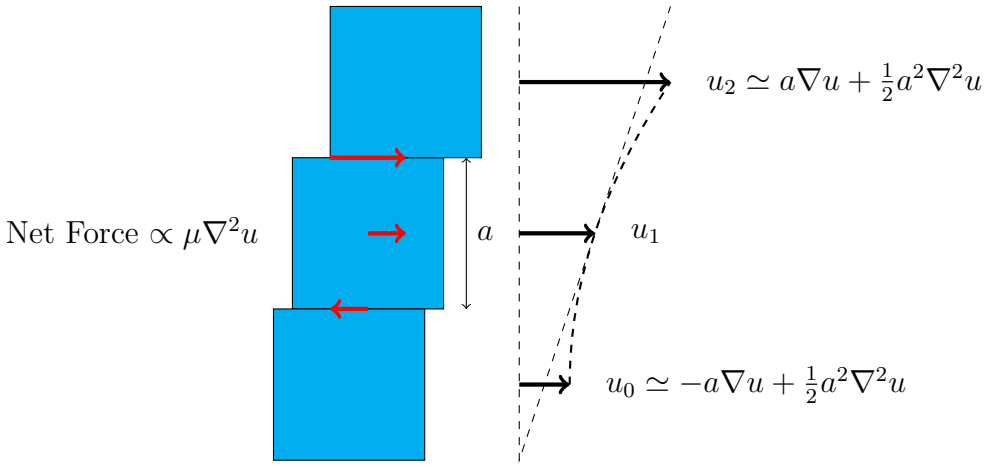


Figure 5.6: Net force on fluid element proportional to $\mu\nabla^2 u$.

We have seen that a fluid element may be subjected to a net pressure force caused by the pressure gradient ∇p, and a net viscous force caused by the viscosity and velocity laplacian $\nabla^2 u$. The fluid element has a mass, and the total net force may accelerate the fluid element in accordance with Newton's second law. This law is embodied in the Navier-Stokes equation.

If no body forces (eg. gravity) are relevant, and the fluid is **incompressible**, the Navier-Stokes equation is:

$$\rho\left(\frac{\partial\vec{u}}{\partial t} + (\vec{u}\cdot\nabla)\vec{u}\right) = -\nabla p + \mu\nabla^2\vec{u} \tag{5.11}$$

If the equation is multiplied by the volume of the infinitesimal fluid element, then the left-hand side is the acceleration, and the right-hand side is the force due to the pressure gradient and viscous shear. The 'advection operator' $(\vec{u}\cdot\nabla) = u\partial_x + v\partial_y$ gives the 'inertial' term $(\vec{u}\cdot\nabla)\vec{u}$.

5.2 Microfluidics: Stokes or 'creeping' flow

The Navier-Stokes equations are an excellent description of much fluid flow. However, the advection terms like $u\partial_x u$ in the differential equation are not linear, in the sense that they cannot be put in the form $\cdots + a_0 u + a_1 \partial_x u + \cdots$. Nonlinear partial differential equations are notoriously difficult to solve. But there is hope. In some physical cases, the nonlinear terms may be much smaller than the rest, and contribute only a negligible amount to the solution. In that case, the nonlinear terms can be discarded, and the solution of the resulting linear equation is a very good approximation. We will now show that this is true for the microfluidic case where slip effects are noticeable.

One way to compare the relative magnitudes of the terms is to first non-dimensionalise the terms. The idea is this: express the fundamental physical quantities as fractions of a 'characteristic' value. The fraction forms a new, dimensionless variable. Then typical values of the dimensionless variables have a magnitude on the order of one. For example, consider Poiseuille flow down a straight pipe, where the average velocity is U. The velocity u varies from zero at the wall, to $\frac{3}{2}U$ in the centre of the pipe. Now define the dimensionless velocity $\hat{u} = u/U$. Clearly, the magnitude of $\hat{u}$ will vary from zero at the wall, to $\frac{3}{2}$ in the centre. i.e. for most of the domain, $\hat{u}$ is 'about one'.

A non-dimensionalised equation will hopefully have many terms with a magnitude on the order of one, with the magnitude of the remaining terms easily evaluated. Thus, non-dimensionalising expedites the process of deciding which terms are negligible enough to discard.

5.2.1 Non-dimensionalising and the Reynolds Number

Example for Analysis: 2-D Poiseuille Flow

This thesis analyses microfluidic flow experiments that reveal slip effects. The canonical flow experiment is flow down a capillary — a very thin pipe or channel. We shall use this type of flow to analyse our non-dimensionalisation. For clarity, we shall stick to two dimensions; this models pressure-driven flow between two infinite flat planes separated by distance L. This is known as plane Poiseuille flow. The solution is a parabolic velocity profile, the same as for Poiseuille flow as found in a straight, circular pipe:

$$u(y) = \frac{1}{2\mu}\left(\frac{dp}{dx}\right)\left(y^2 - yL\right) \tag{5.12}$$

The standard way to non-dimensionalise pipe flow is to choose the pipe diameter L as the characteristic length. Likewise, we choose channnel width L, and average velocity U as the characteristic velocity.

Then the non-dimensional variables are:

$$\hat{x} = \frac{x}{L}, \quad \hat{y} = \frac{y}{L}, \quad \hat{u} = \frac{u}{U}, \quad \hat{v} = \frac{v}{U} \tag{5.13}$$

The other variables are pressure and time. We would like to express them in terms of existing quantities. It turns out that $\mu U/L$ has units of pressure, and the ratio L/U has units of time, so define characteristic pressure and time:

$$P = \frac{\mu U}{L}, \quad T = \frac{L}{U} \tag{5.14}$$

giving dimensionless variables $\hat{p} = p/P$ and $\hat{t} = t/T$:

$$\hat{p} = \frac{L}{\mu U}p, \quad \hat{t} = \frac{U}{L}t \tag{5.15}$$

Thus we can substitute

$$x = L\hat{x}, \quad y = L\hat{y}, \quad u = U\hat{u}, \quad v = U\hat{v}, \quad p = \frac{\mu U}{L}\hat{p}, \quad t = \frac{L}{U}\hat{t} \tag{5.16}$$

into the Navier-Stokes equation. For clarity, we focus on just the x component:

$$\rho\left(\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+u\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}+v\frac{\partial u}{\partial y}\right)=-\frac{\partial p}{\partial x}+\mu\left(\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2}+\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2}\right) \tag{5.17}$$

Substitute:

$$\rho\left(\frac{\partial U\hat{u}}{\partial\frac{L}{U}\hat{t}}+U\hat{u}\frac{\partial U\hat{u}}{\partial L\hat{x}}+U\hat{v}\frac{\partial U\hat{u}}{\partial L\hat{y}}\right)=-\frac{\partial\frac{\mu U}{L}\hat{p}}{\partial L\hat{x}}+\mu\left(\frac{\partial^2 U\hat{u}}{\partial(L\hat{x})^2}+\frac{\partial^2 U\hat{u}}{\partial(L\hat{y})^2}\right) \tag{5.18}$$

$$\rho\frac{U^2}{L}\left(\frac{\partial\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{t}}+\hat{u}\frac{\partial\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{x}}+\hat{v}\frac{\partial\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{y}}\right)=-\frac{\mu U}{L^2}\frac{\partial\hat{p}}{\partial\hat{x}}+\frac{\mu U}{L^2}\left(\frac{\partial^2\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{x}^2}+\frac{\partial^2\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{y}^2}\right) \tag{5.19}$$

$$\frac{\rho LU}{\mu}\left(\frac{\partial\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{t}}+\hat{u}\frac{\partial\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{x}}+\hat{v}\frac{\partial\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{y}}\right)=-\frac{\partial\hat{p}}{\partial\hat{x}}+\left(\frac{\partial^2\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{x}^2}+\frac{\partial^2\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{y}^2}\right) \tag{5.20}$$

Define Kinematic Viscosity

$$\nu=\frac{\mu}{\rho} \tag{5.21}$$

Then define the **Reynolds Number:**

$$\mathrm{Re}=\frac{LU}{\nu} \tag{5.22}$$

Thus the x component of the Navier-Stokes equations are:

$$\mathrm{Re}\left(\frac{\partial\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{t}}+\hat{u}\frac{\partial\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{x}}+\hat{v}\frac{\partial\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{y}}\right)=-\frac{\partial\hat{p}}{\partial\hat{x}}+\left(\frac{\partial^2\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{x}^2}+\frac{\partial^2\hat{u}}{\partial\hat{y}^2}\right) \tag{5.23}$$

We are now in a position to look at the relative magnitudes of the terms.

Magnitudes of Velocity Terms

We have chosen Poiseuille flow to illustrate our non-dimensionalisation. Since it has an exact solution, we know exactly what the velocity and its derivatives are. The parabolic velocity profile looks as shown in Figure (5.7).

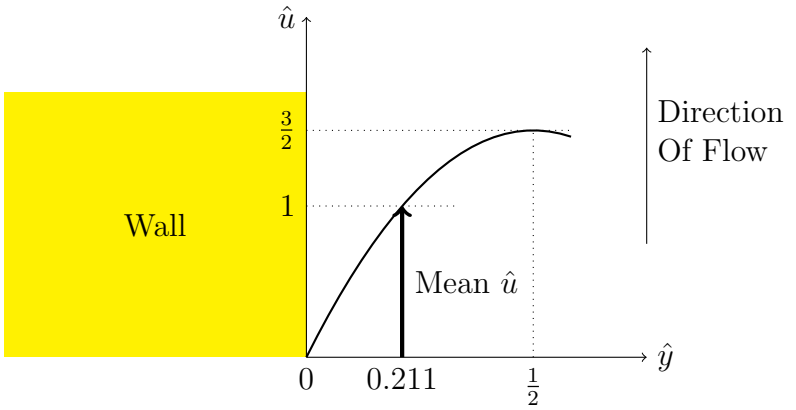


Figure 5.7: Dimensionless parabolic flow profile of plane Poiseuille flow.

By construction, the $\hat{u}$ term ranges from zero to $\frac{3}{2}$. Hence, $\hat{u}$ is of order one.

For *strict* Poiseuille flow, the walls are perfectly flat, and the velocity perpendicular to the wall is zero everywhere. That is, $\hat{v} = 0$ always.

But we may consider a channel with roughness on the walls, with the amplitude of the roughness *small* compared to the channel width, so that the flow is Poiseuille-like. Then, near the wall, the transverse velocity $\hat{v}$ may approach the magnitude of $\hat{u}$. The magnitude of $\hat{u}$ near the wall is small compared to the average, so we would expect perhaps $\hat{v} < 0.1$. That is, for rough-walled Poiseuille-like flow, $\hat{v}$ is of order 0.1, at most.

Magnitudes of Velocity Derivative Terms

A typical capillary flow experiment is carried out with flow rates held constant, and at low enough flow velocities that the flow is laminar. For the purposes of our analysis, we shall assume steady non-turbulent flow, so the

time-dependent velocity term vanishes.

$$\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{t}} = 0 \tag{5.24}$$

For the parabolic flow profile of Poiseuille flow, the derivative of velocity is linear, as shown in Figure (5.8).

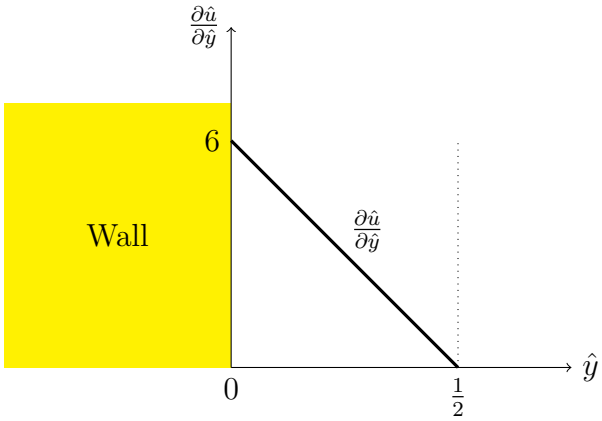


Figure 5.8: Velocity first derivative of plane Poiseuille flow.

The average *value* of $\partial_y \hat{u}$ over the channel width is zero. But the average *magnitude* is 3. So $\partial_{\hat{y}} \hat{u}$ is 'of order one'.

For strict Poiseuille flow, $\hat{u}$ has no x-dependence, so $\partial_{\hat{x}} \hat{u} = 0$ everywhere.

But for rough-walled Poiseuille flow, the wall corrugations will cause velocity $\hat{u}$ near the wall to change in the x direction, over the period of the corrugation. Near the wall, $\hat{u}$ is on the order of 0.1 or less, so $\Delta \hat{u}$ over the period can be no more than 0.1. For the flow to remain Poiseuille-like, the roughness period must be small compared to the channel width, i. e. on the order of 0.1 or less. Thus, in the vicinity of the wall, $\partial_{\hat{x}} \hat{u} \sim 0.1/0.1 = 1$. Away from the wall, $\partial_{\hat{x}} \hat{u}$ becomes smaller as flow converges on strict Poiseuille flow. Thus, $\partial_{\hat{x}} \hat{u}$ is of order one, at most.

Magnitudes of Advection Terms

$\partial_{\hat{x}} \hat{u}$ vanishes over the middle part of the domain (where $\hat{u}$ is at most 3/2) and reaches a maximum of about 1 near the wall, where $\hat{u}$ is of order 0.1.

Therefore, $\hat{u}\partial_{\hat{x}}\hat{u}$ is at most 0.1.

Near the wall, both $\hat{v}$ and $\partial_{\hat{y}}\hat{u}$ are at their maxima: $\hat{v} \sim 0.1$ and $\partial_{\hat{y}}\hat{u} \sim 5$. Their product is about 0.5, or order 1. Thus, $\hat{v}\partial_{\hat{y}}\hat{u}$ is of order one, at most.

Magnitudes of Second Derivatives of Velocity

The second spatial derivative of the parabolic velocity profile is a constant, as illustrated in Figure (5.9).

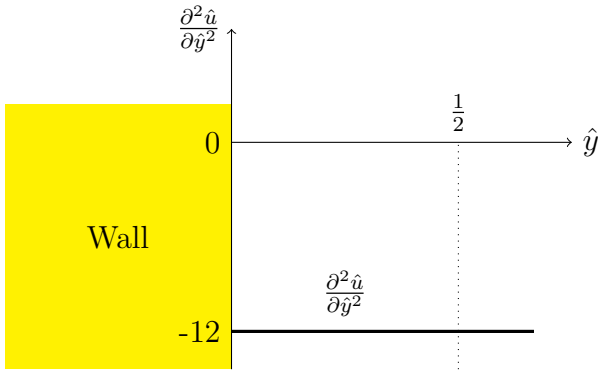


Figure 5.9: Velocity Laplacian of plane Poiseuille flow.

For Poiseuille flow nondimensionalized in the standard way, $\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}^2} = -12$. That is, the magnitude is of order ten.

For strictly Poiseuille flow, the x velocity has no x dependence, so $\partial_{\hat{x}}\hat{u} = 0$, and $\partial^2_{\hat{x}}\hat{u} = 0$.

For rough-walled Poiseuille-like flow, we have allowed that $\partial_{\hat{x}}\hat{u} \sim 1$ for the 10% of the domain near the wall. This reduces to near zero for the rest of the domain. Therefore, $\partial_{\hat{x}}\hat{u}$ reduces from order one to zero in distance 0.1, hence average $\partial^2_{\hat{x}}\hat{u}$ *near the wall* is of order ten. Hence, $\partial^2_{\hat{x}}\hat{u}$ is of order ten at most.

Summary of Magnitudes of Terms

At this point, we can summarize what we know about the relative magnitudes of the terms in the Navier-Stokes equation. For steady strict Poiseuille flow

nondimensionalized in the standard way, the velocity $\hat{u}(x, y)$ in the direction of the flow obeys:

$$\mathrm{Re}\left(\underbrace{\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{t}}}_{=0} + \underbrace{\hat{u}\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{x}}}_{=0} + \underbrace{\hat{v}\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}}}_{=0}\right) = \underbrace{-\frac{\partial \hat{p}}{\partial \hat{x}}}_{\text{unknown}} + \left(\underbrace{\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{x}^2}}_{=0} + \underbrace{\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}^2}}_{\sim 10}\right) \tag{5.25}$$

Which simplifies considerably to:

$$0 = -\frac{\partial \hat{p}}{\partial \hat{x}} + \frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}^2} \tag{5.26}$$

But for rough-walled Poiseuille-like flow, things are not quite so simple:

$$\mathrm{Re}\left(\underbrace{\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{t}}}_{=0} + \underbrace{\hat{u}\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{x}}}_{\sim 0.1} + \underbrace{\hat{v}\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}}}_{\sim 1}\right) = \underbrace{-\frac{\partial \hat{p}}{\partial \hat{x}}}_{\text{unknown}} + \left(\underbrace{\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{x}^2}}_{\sim 10} + \underbrace{\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}^2}}_{\sim 10}\right) \tag{5.27}$$

That is:

$$\mathrm{Re}\left(\underbrace{\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{t}} + \hat{u}\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{x}} + \hat{v}\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}}}_{\text{sum is order 1}}\right) = \underbrace{-\frac{\partial \hat{p}}{\partial \hat{x}}}_{\text{unknown}} + \left(\underbrace{\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{x}^2}}_{\sim 10} + \underbrace{\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}^2}}_{\sim 10}\right) \tag{5.28}$$

Importantly, we have discovered the relative magnitudes of the terms that *do not depend on the physical situation.* The above relation holds for Poiseuille flow of *any* fluid at *any* scale. The parameters pertaining to the specific physical system are wrapped up into the Reynolds number.

Now is a good time, then, to evaluate the Reynolds number for the kind of microfluidic slip experiments we are considering.

Reynolds number for microfluidic channels

A recent Poiseuille-type microfluidic slip experiment appears in the 2006 paper by Huang *et al* in the Journal of Fluid Mechanics [24]. They looked at steady flow in channels 50 μm deep and 250 μm wide. Particle velocimetry

techniques showed a velocity distribution with a maximum velocity of about 600 μm s^{-1}. When defining the Reynolds number for flow in a rectangular duct, the standard characteristic length to use is the **hydraulic diameter**, which is four times the cross-sectional area divided by the perimeter. In this case it is 83.33 μm.

The viscosity of water at room temperatures is very close to $\mu = 0.001$ kgs^{-1}m^{-1}. The density of water is $\rho = 1000$ kgm^{-3}. We shall choose $L = 100\mu$m and $U = 400\mu$m s^{-1} as conservative characteristic length and velocity scales. Hence the Reynolds number evaluates to:

$$\mathrm{Re} = \frac{\rho L U}{\mu} = \frac{1000 \times 0.0001 \times 0.004}{0.001} = 0.4 \tag{5.29}$$

Thus the magnitudes of terms in the Navier-Stokes equation are:

$$\underbrace{\mathrm{Re}\left(\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{t}} + \hat{u}\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{x}} + \hat{v}\frac{\partial \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}}\right)}_{\text{order } 0.4} = \underbrace{-\frac{\partial \hat{p}}{\partial \hat{x}}}_{\text{unknown}} + \left(\underbrace{\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{x}^2}}_{\sim 10} + \underbrace{\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}^2}}_{\sim 10}\right) \tag{5.30}$$

The three terms on the right-hand side sum up to something with a magnitude at least 25 times smaller than the largest term on the right. That is, the equation is 'close to' the similar equation in which the the right-hand side terms sum to *zero.* Thus, we choose to solve the much simpler equation:

$$0 = -\frac{\partial \hat{p}}{\partial \hat{x}} + \left(\frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{x}^2} + \frac{\partial^2 \hat{u}}{\partial \hat{y}^2}\right) \tag{5.31}$$

The y component of the Navier-Stokes is:

$$\mathrm{Re}\left(\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{t}} + \hat{u}\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{x}} + \hat{v}\frac{\partial \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{y}}\right) = -\frac{\partial \hat{p}}{\partial \hat{y}} + \left(\frac{\partial^2 \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{x}^2} + \frac{\partial^2 \hat{v}}{\partial \hat{y}^2}\right) \tag{5.32}$$

For pure Poiseuille flow, this reduces to $0 = 0$. For rough-walled Poiseuille-like flow, we expect $\hat{v}$ to be nonzero but very small compared to $\hat{u}$. So we anticipate no significant loss of information if we discard the left-hand side of the y velocity equation. If we do this, then we have simplified the Navier-Stokes vector equation to:

$$0 = -\hat{\nabla}\hat{p} + \hat{\nabla}^2\hat{\vec{u}} \tag{5.33}$$

or

$$\hat{\nabla}^2 \hat{\vec{u}} = \hat{\nabla} \hat{p} \tag{5.34}$$

This is known as the Stokes equation, and describes very slow-moving flow described as 'creeping' flow or Stokes flow. Stokes flow is associated with Reynolds numbers $\mathrm{Re} \ll 1$. Some perspective: for flow in a pipe, flows with Reynolds numbers below about 2,300 are always laminar, while flows with Reynolds numbers above about 4,000 are always turbulent.

In Stokes flow, the time-dependent and inertial terms are deemed to be negligible compared to the pressure and viscosity terms. Thus, the Stokes equation describes the force balance between pressure and viscous stresses.

5.2.2 Redimensionalize back to Physical Units

We will convert back into physical units. Substituting the definitions of the dimensionless variables back into the Stokes equation:

$$\left(\frac{\partial^2 \frac{u}{U}}{\partial (\frac{x}{L})^2} + \frac{\partial^2 \frac{u}{U}}{\partial (\frac{y}{L})^2} \right) = \frac{\partial \frac{L}{\mu U} p}{\partial \frac{x}{L}} \tag{5.35}$$

$$\frac{L^2}{\mu U} \left(\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2} \right) = \frac{L^2}{\mu U} \frac{\partial p}{\partial x} \tag{5.36}$$

$$\mu \left(\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2} \right) = \frac{\partial p}{\partial x} \tag{5.37}$$

Similarly for the other vector components of the Stokes equation.

Thus, for microfluidic flow down a capillary, the bulk fluid obeys the Stokes equation:

$$\mu \nabla^2 \vec{u} = \nabla p \tag{5.38}$$

In the field of microfluidics, it is customary to assume Stokes flow in all cases. However, we note that for example, the capillary slip experiment of Vinogradova 2009 [58] had velocities of up to 5 cm per second down a channel 100 μm wide, yielding a Reynolds number $\mathrm{Re} \sim 1$.

5.3 Modeling the Boundary: Generalized Slip

After establishing that the Stokes equation and incompressibility condition hold in the bulk region (domain) of our model, we now turn to the boundary. There may be some subtlety as to *where* the boundary is, in the following sense: In the mathematical model we are constructing, the distinction between bulk and boundary has the perfect discontinuity of a geometric object. However, as noted earlier, in a physical system, there may be some ambiguity as to what constitutes the boundary; there may be a *region* of finite depth that could reasonably be called the boundary region. The question then is: what part of the boundary region of the physical system corresponds to the boundary surface in the mathematical model?

The justifiable choice is for the mathematical boundary to map to the *top* of the physical boundary region. In the physical system, certain conditions hold that are homogeneous through the bulk of the fluid. However, near the surface, there may be some deviation from these conditions (caused perhaps by a depletion layer). This is not allowed in the mathematical model (since in the model, the domain is homogeneous), so the mathematical boundary must map to the lowest part of the homogeneous physical bulk region. This is illustrated in Figure (5.10).

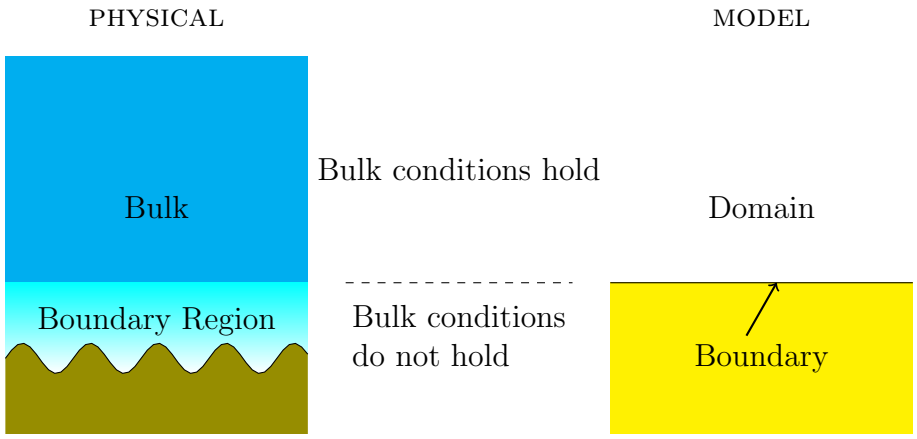


Figure 5.10: Model boundary maps to *top* of physical boundary region.

5.3.1 Simple Shear with Navier Slip

As explained in the introductory chapters, the classical boundary condition is 'no slip', and the simplest extension to that is Navier slip, where the boundary velocity is proportional to the velocity gradient:

$$u_{\text{boundary}} = b\frac{\partial u}{\partial z}\bigg|_{\text{boundary}} \tag{5.39}$$

This holds for a system exhibiting **simple shear:** a flat surface with laminar flow above it, with each lamina parallel to the boundary surface. There is no velocity component normal to the surface. See Figure (5.11).

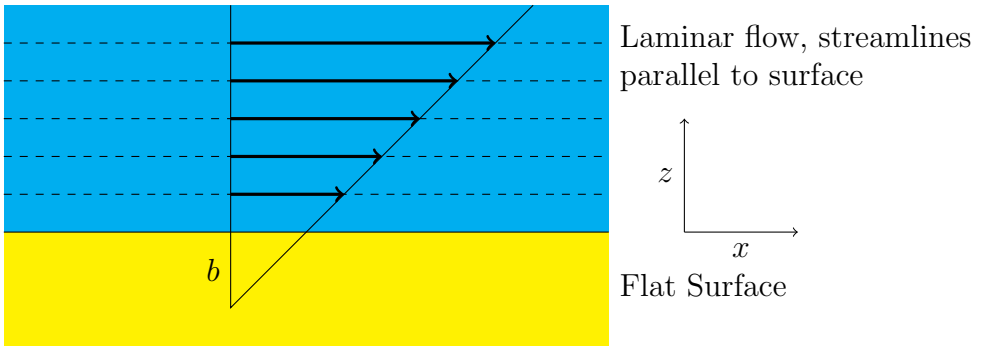


Figure 5.11: Simple shear.

The laminae *shear* past each other, giving rise to the viscous force. The *shear rate* is simply the velocity gradient: the rate of change of (parallel) velocity as we move in the normal direction.

The shear rate has an intuitive physical meaning. Consider the action of simple shear on an infinitesimal cube of fluid: the cube starts with all sides at right angles, and is deformed into a parallelipiped. The internal angle θ starts at 90° and gets smaller. In timeslice Δt the change in angle $\Delta\theta$ causes the deformation shown in Figure (5.12).

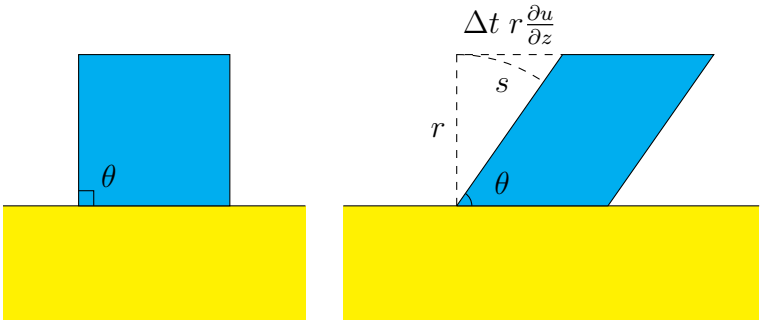


Figure 5.12: Simple shear deforms an infinitesimal cube of fluid.

In timeslice Δt, the top of the cube moves distance $\Delta t\, r\partial_z u$, and the angle changes by $\Delta\theta = s/r$. For sufficiently small Δt, s is much smaller than r, and $s \simeq \Delta t\, r\partial_y u$, so that $\Delta\theta \simeq \Delta t\, \partial_z u$. In the limit $\Delta t \to 0$:

$$\text{shear rate} = \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} \tag{5.40}$$

5.3.2 Oblique Shear and the Velocity Gradient Tensor

If the surface is still flat, but **not** oriented such that the surface maps nicely to the plane $z = 0$, as in Figure (5.13), then the shear rate must be defined with vector derivatives.

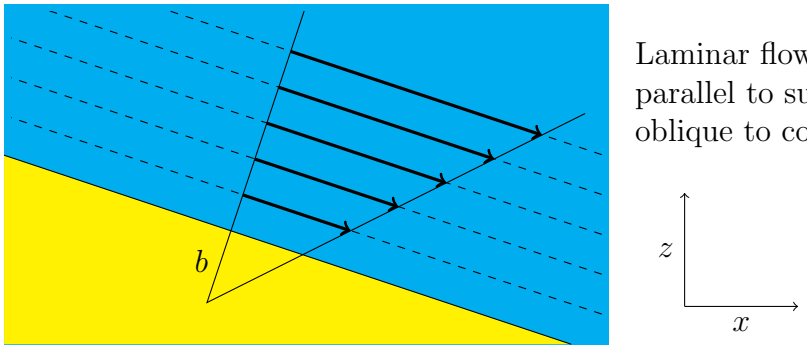


Figure 5.13: Oblique shear.

We introduce the unit vectors normal and tangent to the surface, $\vec{n}$ and $\vec{t}$. Then the tangential component of velocity is $\vec{u}\cdot\vec{t}$. Because the streamlines

are parallel to the flat surface, $\vec{u}$ is parallel to $\vec{t}$, so that $\vec{u} \cdot \vec{t}$ is in fact the *magnitude* of $\vec{u}$.

We can define the shear rate as the rate of change of the tangential velocity in the normal direction. That is, the tangential component of the directional derivative of velocity in the normal direction. The directional derivative of the velocity in the normal direction is $\vec{n} \cdot \nabla \vec{u}$, and its tangential component is $\vec{n} \cdot \nabla \vec{u} \cdot \vec{t}$. See the schematic of Figure (5.14).

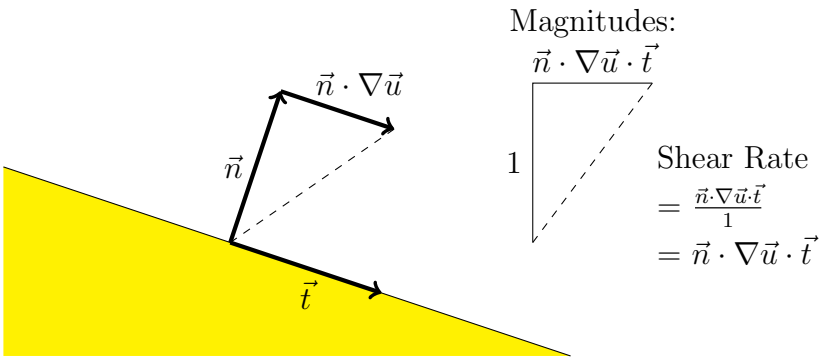


Figure 5.14: The shear rate at a flat surface of arbitrary orientation.

Thus for a *flat* surface, with arbitrary coordinates, the shear rate is

$$\vec{n} \cdot \nabla \vec{u} \cdot \vec{t} \tag{5.41}$$

5.3.3 Curved Surface and Deformation Rate Tensor

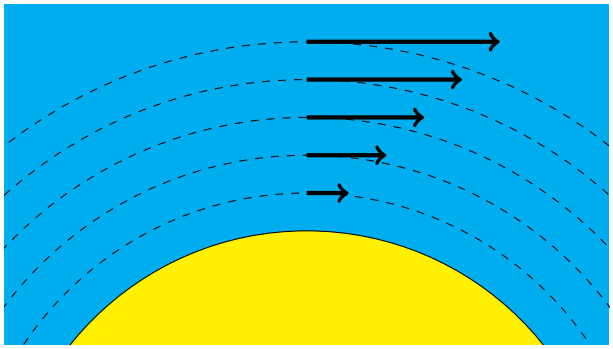


Figure 5.15: Laminar flow over a non-flat surface.

But what if the surface is not flat? (Like Figure (5.15).)

It is tempting to assume the shear rate is the same as in the case of the generalized flat surface, as shown in the schematic of Figure (5.16).

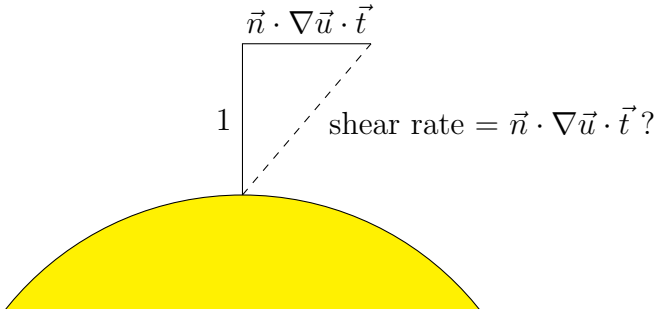


Figure 5.16: Is the shear rate the same as for a flat surface?

But consider the *possible* action on an infinitesimal cube of fluid shown in Figure (5.17).

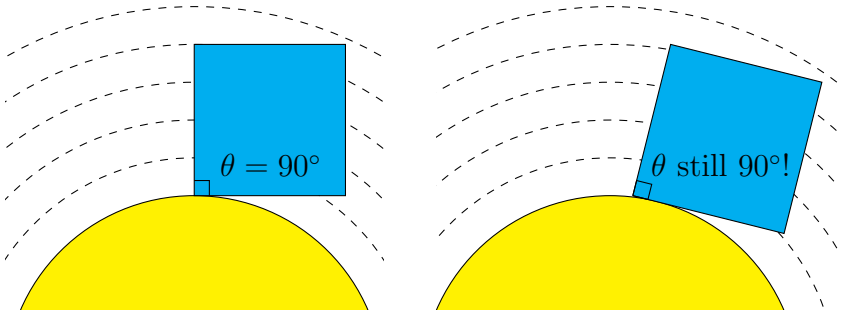


Figure 5.17: An infinitesimal cube may rotate without deforming.

The infinitesimal cubical element has *rotated* (and perhaps translated) but *not deformed.* The laminae have *not* slid past each other, and the cube has not been subjected to shear. There will be no viscous stress operating within the cube.

In this case, $\vec{n} \cdot \nabla \vec{u} \cdot \vec{t}$ is not the shear rate of the cube, but the rate of rotation (angular velocity). To get the true shear rate, we need to somehow remove the rotation.

The velocity gradient tensor (and Fréchet derivative) *linearize* the flow field. $\nabla\vec{u}$ is a linear transformation of a direction vector (the result being the correction vector). Geometrically, a linear transformation can be decomposed into a rotation, an area-preserving deformation, and an expansion. Following the exposition in the textbook [46] of C. Pozrikidis:

$$\nabla\vec{u} = \mathbf{\Xi} + \mathbf{E} + \frac{1}{2}(\nabla\cdot\vec{u})\mathbf{I} \tag{5.42}$$

The rotation is represented in the **vorticity tensor**, $\mathbf{\Xi}$, the deformation in the **deformation rate tensor**, $\mathbf{E}$, and the expansion in $\frac{1}{2}(\nabla\cdot\vec{u})\mathbf{I}$

Working, for clarity, with 2-dimensional flow only, the vorticity tensor is:

$$\mathbf{\Xi} = \frac{1}{2}(\nabla\vec{u} - \nabla\vec{u}^T) = \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} 0 & \partial_x v - \partial_y u \\ \partial_y u - \partial_x v & 0 \end{bmatrix} \tag{5.43}$$

The deformation rate tensor is:

$$\mathbf{E} = \frac{1}{2}(\nabla\vec{u} + \nabla\vec{u}^T) - \frac{1}{2}(\nabla\cdot\vec{u})\mathbf{I} = \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} \partial_x u - \partial_y v & \partial_x v + \partial_y u \\ \partial_y u + \partial_x v & \partial_y v - \partial_x u \end{bmatrix} \tag{5.44}$$

The expansion rate tensor is:

$$\frac{1}{2}(\nabla\cdot\vec{u})\mathbf{I} = \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} \partial_x u + \partial_y v & 0 \\ 0 & \partial_x u + \partial_y v \end{bmatrix} \tag{5.45}$$

We will deal with liquids, which we assume to be incompressible. Thus the divergence vanishes:

$$\nabla\cdot\vec{u} = 0 \tag{5.46}$$

Therefore, the expansion term vanishes, and the deformation rate tensor simplifies to:

$$\mathbf{E} = \frac{1}{2}(\nabla\vec{u} + \nabla\vec{u}^T) = \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} 2\partial_x u & \partial_x v + \partial_y u \\ \partial_y u + \partial_x v & 2\partial_y v \end{bmatrix} \tag{5.47}$$

So for incompressible fluids, the linearized flow field is fully described by two terms, the *antisymmetric* and *symmetric* parts of the velocity gradient tensor:

$$\nabla\vec{u} = \frac{1}{2}(\nabla\vec{u} - \nabla\vec{u}^T) + \frac{1}{2}(\nabla\vec{u} + \nabla\vec{u}^T) = \mathbf{\Xi} + \mathbf{E} \tag{5.48}$$

We have solved our problem: removing the rotational transforms from the velocity gradient tensor is as simple as $\nabla\vec{u} - \boldsymbol{\Xi} = \mathbf{E}$. So the deformation rate tensor $\mathbf{E}$ contains all transformations of the velocity gradient tensor *other* than rotation. Specifically, it must describe all shear.

We illustrate this in a simple example of 2-dimensional flow, where the normal and tangent vectors happen to align with the coordinate axes, as shown in Figure (5.18).

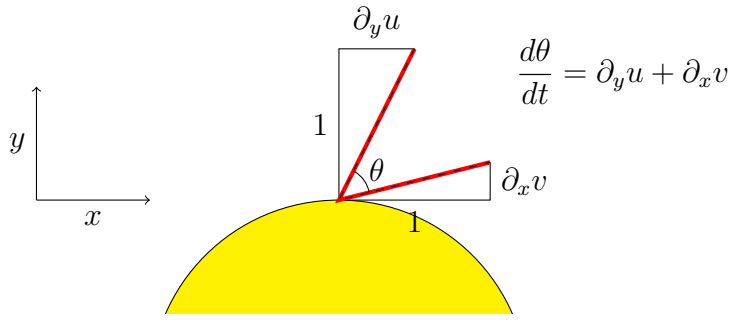


Figure 5.18: The true shear rate at a point where the normal and tangent vectors align with the coordinate axes.

We see that the true shear rate at this point is $\partial_y u + \partial_x v$. The normal and tangent vectors at this point are:

$$\vec{n} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \quad \vec{t} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \tag{5.49}$$

What is $\vec{n} \cdot 2\mathbf{E} \cdot \vec{t}$?

$$\vec{n} \cdot 2\mathbf{E} \cdot \vec{t} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix} \cdot \begin{bmatrix} 2\partial_x u & \partial_x v + \partial_y u \\ \partial_y u + \partial_x v & 2\partial_y v \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} = \partial_y u + \partial_x v \tag{5.50}$$

We have intuitively confirmed that for a general fluid flow, the shear rate associated with an infinitesimal plane is:

$$\text{shear rate} = \frac{d\theta}{dt} = \vec{n} \cdot 2\mathbf{E} \cdot \vec{t} \tag{5.51}$$

where $\vec{n}$ and $\vec{t}$ are the unit normal and tangent vectors to the plane.

5.3.4 Generalized Slip Condition

We have discovered the generalized shear rate: the rate of shear of an infinitesimal plane sliding over another infinitesimal plane. If the plane is on the solid surface, then we can now write down a generalized Navier-type slip condition: the tangential velocity on the plane is proportional to the shear rate at the plane. The constant of proportionality is of course the slip length b.

$$\vec{u} \cdot \vec{t} = b\, \vec{n} \cdot 2\mathbf{E} \cdot \vec{t} \tag{5.52}$$

Now $\mathbf{E}$ is symmetric, so $\vec{n} \cdot \mathbf{E} = \mathbf{E} \cdot \vec{n}$. Furthermore, both sides of the equation are a dot product with $\vec{t}$, so we may simplify to:

$$\vec{u} = b\, 2\mathbf{E} \cdot \vec{n} \tag{5.53}$$

or,

$$\vec{u} = b\, (\nabla \vec{u} + \nabla \vec{u}^T) \cdot \vec{n} \tag{5.54}$$

It remains only to note that the slip length could be a *function* of position on the boundary, and the boundary on which Equation (5.54) holds may also be described by a function. The boundary function will typically be a surface – a 'height' function $h(x, y)$ on the x, y plane.

5.3.5 Top Boundary Condition

The simplest type of flow where an effective slip length is meaningful is Couette-like flow, driven by a constant velocity condition at the top of the bulk of fluid. In a physical system, the constant velocity is provided by plate moving at a constant velocity in the x direction only, located at some height P above the slip surface. The classic no-slip condition holds on the plate, so fluid at the top of the bulk has the same constant velocity.

In our model, at some height P above the slip surface, there is a constant velocity u_P in the x direction only:

$$\vec{u}(x, y, P) = (u_P, 0, 0) \tag{5.55}$$

(Incidentally, the homogenization procedure we employ in Chapter 6 does not actually need this top boundary condition, though the perturbation method used in Chapter 7 does. This is a strength of the homogenization technique.)

5.4 Complete Mathematical Model

Our mathematical model can now be formally stated. A bulk of fluid is situated above a boundary surface. The boundary surface is a function on the x, y plane, and the z direction is in general perpendicular to the boundary.

The fluid is an incompressible liquid, so the divergence is zero everywhere in the bulk:

$$\nabla \cdot \vec{u} = 0 \tag{5.56}$$

The liquid is Newtonian and the flow has a low Reynolds number, so flow at each point in the bulk obeys Stokes equation:

$$\mu \nabla^2 \vec{u} = \nabla p \tag{5.57}$$

The velocity of the fluid at each point on the boundary satisfies the generalized slip boundary condition:

$$\vec{u} = b \left(\nabla \vec{u} + \nabla \vec{u}^T \right) \cdot \vec{n} \tag{5.58}$$

At some height P above the slip surface, there is a constant velocity u_P in the x direction only:

$$\vec{u}(x, y, P) = (u_P, 0, 0) \tag{5.59}$$

In the next chapter we shall find an expression for the effective slip by finding a **homogenized** solution to these partial differential equations.

Chapter 6

The Homogenized Effective Slip Length

In this chapter, we shall find the *homogenized slip length* of a bulk of fluid flowing over a rough slippery surface. We start by giving a high-level overview of the homogenization technique, then explain each aspect of homogenization in detail. The first aspect we explain is the variational formulation and its relation to the calculus of variations. Then the Stokes equations are put into variational form, then we find the variational formulation of the Stokes equation with the full tensor slip boundary condition. We then take a step sideways and tackle the concept of weak convergence, and show that periodic functions weakly converge to their mean. With all the machinery finally in place, we homogenize the variational formulation of the Stokes equation with tensor slip. From the homogenized formulation, we derive the homogenized effective slip length. We close the chapter with discussion of the physical interpretation of the result and its likely range of applicability.

In our mathematical model of the system, fluid flow at each point in the bulk obeys Stokes equation:

$$\mu\nabla^2\vec{u} = \nabla p \tag{6.1}$$

And fluid at each point on the boundary satisfies the generalized slip boundary condition:

$$\vec{u} = b\,(\nabla\vec{u} + \nabla\vec{u}^T)\cdot\vec{n} \tag{6.2}$$

The boundary is a surface described by a periodic height function $h(x, y)$ on the x, y plane. $h(x, y)$ may be defined so that the $z = 0$ plane is at the tops of the peaks of $h(x, y)$. The fluid may be supposed to be flowing in the x direction. The model is summarized in Figure (6.1).

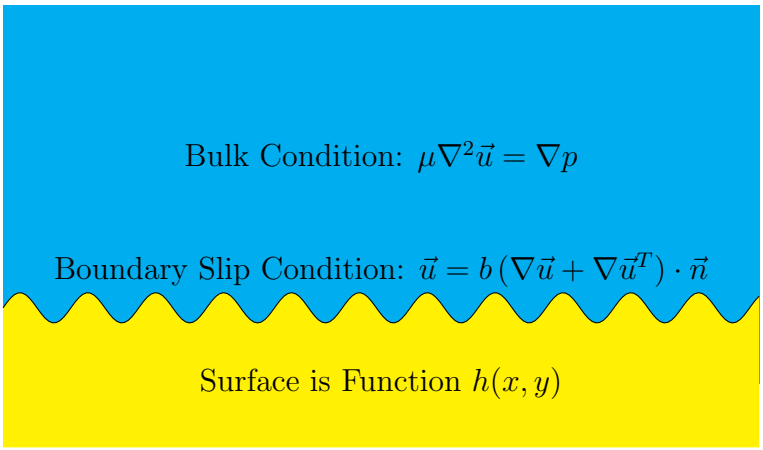


Figure 6.1: Summary of the mathematical model.

The *effective* slip length of a rough surface was defined back in Chapter 1. At sufficient height above the surface, perturbations due to the rough surface have died away, and the flow *behaves like* flow in an *effective system:* flow over a flat 'effective' surface with a uniform slip length, b_{eff}. We illustrate this with Couette-type flow in Figure (6.2).

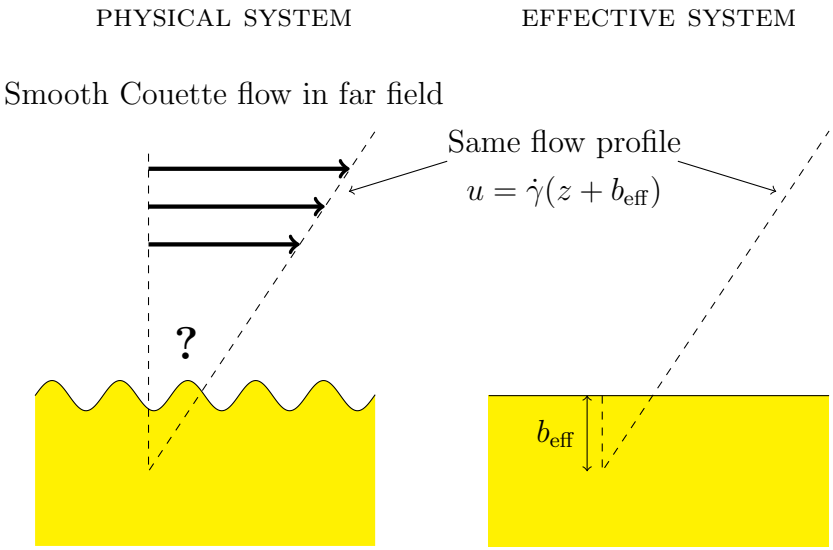


Figure 6.2: The effective slip length of Couette-type flow.

6.0.1 Homogenization

Homogenization is a modern technique for approximating the solutions of partial differential equations, developed in the 1960s and '70s. It began with the study of PDEs with rapidly oscillating coefficients. The basic idea was to identify the period of oscillation with a small parameter ϵ, and to consider the limit as the period tended to zero. Depending on the problem, one may get a solution as a series in ϵ: $u = u_0 + \epsilon u_1 + \cdots$, or one may obtain a limiting PDE for which a solution can be found. The technique can be applied to PDEs that hold on periodic structure; ϵ is the period of the structure. Then we find an 'effective' structure as the period of the structure tends to zero. The first book describing homogenization appeared in 1978: "Asymptotic Analysis for Periodic Structure", by Alain Bensoussan, Jacques-Louis Lions and George Papanicolaou.

In standard homogenization techniques, it turns out to be necessary to cast the differential equations into variational or integral form. As a consequence, in some cases it may be possible to exploit the fact that periodic functions weakly converge to their average. (Weak convergence — a 'conver-

gence under the integral sign' — will be defined shortly.) The homogenized solution is an approximation to the solution for a system with a finite period. The smaller the period, the better the approximation.

Thus, homogenization is perfectly suited to our task. In order to use homogenization, we must slightly extend our mathematical model with the following assumptions:

First of all, we must assume that our surface roughness is **periodic**. That is, $h(x, y)$ is a periodic function. This is reasonable, many real rough surfaces are at least quasi-periodic; there seems no loss of information by assuming that the surface is periodic.

Secondly, we must assume the the intrinsic slip length is a periodic function with the **same period as the roughness**. This is applicable in many situations – though there may be interesting exceptions – since in many physical systems, the change in intrinsic slip length is *due to* the roughness, eg. the increased slip over nanobubbles.

Then, broadly speaking, the homogenization procedure is as follows: The period is reduced sequentially, eg. the period is halved at each step in a sequence. The *amplitude* of the roughness must be reduced at the same rate, so that local gradient and curvature of the surface remain unchanged. In the limit of the period tending to zero, we have the **homogenized** equations of flow, which we can consider to model a homogenized system. The homogenized equations contain a slip length parameter. In the language of homogenization theory, this is known as the **effective** slip length parameter. We illustrate this with Couette-type flow in Figure (6.3).

For Couette-type flow, we have defined the effective slip length as the slip length of an 'effective' physical system, with flow solution $u = \dot{\gamma}(z + b_{\text{eff}})$.

If the same system is homogenized, the solution to the homogenized equations is $u = \dot{\gamma}(z + b_{\text{eff}})$. We see immediately that the homogenized effective slip length exactly matches our physical definition of effective slip length.

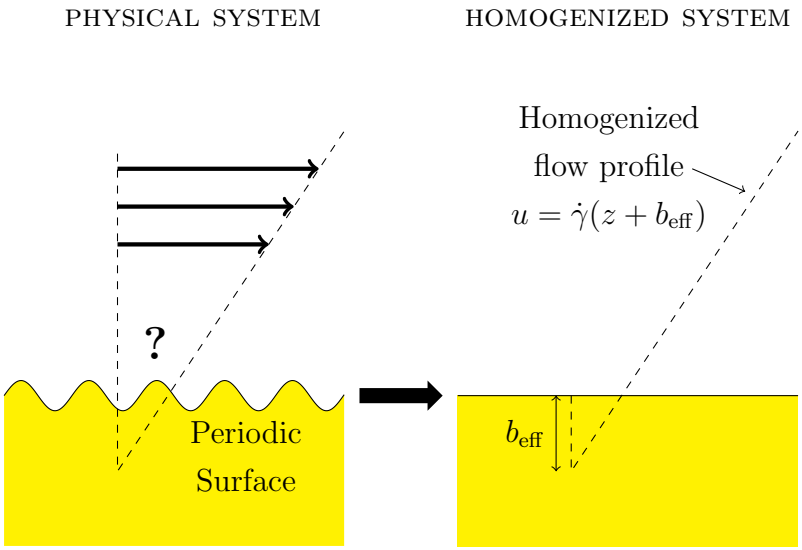


Figure 6.3: The homogenized effective slip length of Couette-type flow.

Let us now homogenize the Stokes equations for flow over rough periodic surfaces with variations in slip of the same period. The particular homogenization technique we shall use comprises the following steps:

Homogenization Process Overview

1. Convert the model PDEs to variational (integral) form.

2. Create a sequence of variational formulations.

3. Find the limit formulation of the sequence:

   - Periodic functions weakly converge to their mean;
   - This lets us find the limit formulation.

4. Convert the limit formulation back to classical formulation

5. Extract the implied slip length as the *homogenized* slip length.

6.1 Variational Form

The variational form comes originally from the Calculus of Variations. The canonical use for the calculus of variations is with a *minimization* problem. We seek a *function* on a domain that minimizes some quantity. The quantity to be minimized is a *functional*, a mapping from the space of functions to the real numbers. The functional will be some kind of integral, with the integrand being some combination of the function, its derivatives (of various order), and position in the domain.

$$F(u) = \int_a^b f(u, u', \dots, x)\, dx, \qquad F(u) \mapsto \mathbb{R} \tag{6.3}$$

The boundary values of the function $u(x)$ are given. The basic concept of calculus of variations is to take $u(x)$ to be the solution function that minimizes the functional F. That being the case, any *variation* away from u, however small, will increase F. Let $v(x)$ be an arbitrary function that is zero at the boundary (i.e. zero at a and b), and let ϵ be a small parameter. Then:

$$F(u) \leq F(u + \epsilon v) \qquad \forall v : v(a) = v(b) = 0 \tag{6.4}$$

This minimizing function and variation are depicted in Figure (6.4).

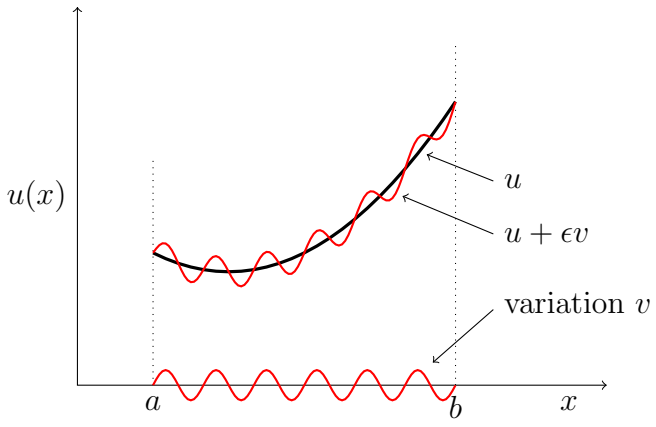


Figure 6.4: The minimizing function $u(x)$ and an arbitrary variation $v(x)$ added to it.

For an arbitrary variation v, the small parameter ϵ can be treated as a variable, so that $F(u + \epsilon v)$ is a function from $\mathbb{R}$ to $\mathbb{R}$. Since u minimizes F, $\epsilon = 0$ minimizes $F(\epsilon) : \mathbb{R} \mapsto \mathbb{R}$. The minimum is a stationary point, so the *slope* of $F(\epsilon)$ is zero also at the minimum. That is, for minimizing function u, for any variation v,

$$\frac{d}{d\epsilon} F(u + \epsilon v) = 0 \tag{6.5}$$

This is shown in Figure (6.5).

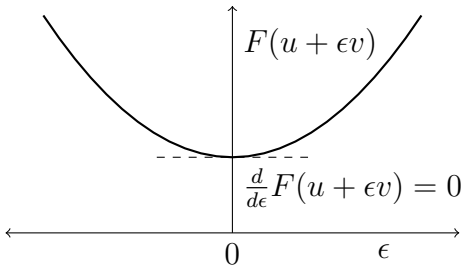


Figure 6.5: The slope of $F(\epsilon)$ is zero at the minimum of $F(\epsilon)$.

6.1.1 Example: Energy Balance

The fully-worked standard example of energy balance appears in Appendix D. We give a summary here.

Consider a film of soapy water suspended across an aperture. At equilibrium, the soap film lies in the x, y plane. Let $u(x, y)$ be the the height of the film above the x, y plane (at point (x, y)), as in the schematic of Figure (6.6).

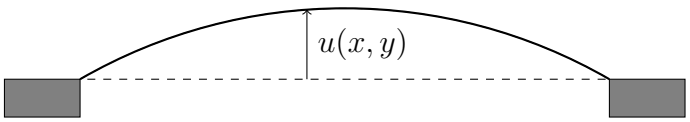


Figure 6.6: A film of soapy water suspended across an aperture.

Assume a pressure below the film distorts it, pushing it upwards. If f is the pressure, then the pressure force does work on the film equal to: $W = \int_\Omega fu\,dA$. The work done on the soap film is stored as elastic potential energy. The soap film has a constant surface tension k that acts tangentially to the surface. The change in potential energy is proportional to the change in surface area, specifically $U = k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2\ dA$. A summary schematic is shown in Figure (6.7).

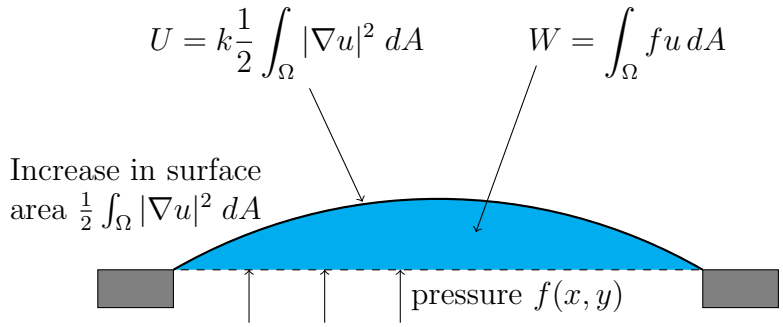


Figure 6.7: The work done distorting the soap film is equal to the elastic potential energy due to the increase in area.

The elastic potential energy is exactly equal to the work done on the soap film by the pressure:

$$k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2\ dA = \int_\Omega fu\ dA \tag{6.6}$$

We can express this as a functional to be minimized:

$$F(u) = k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2\,dA - \int_\Omega fu\,dA \tag{6.7}$$

And take the functional derivative:

$$\frac{d}{d\epsilon}F = \lim_{\epsilon\to 0}\frac{F(u+\epsilon v) - F(u)}{\epsilon} \tag{6.8}$$

$$= k\int_\Omega \nabla u\cdot\nabla v\,dA - \int_\Omega fv\,dA \tag{6.9}$$

Thus the variational form $\frac{d}{d\epsilon}F = 0$ is:

$$k\int_\Omega \nabla u\cdot\nabla v\,dA - \int_\Omega fv\,dA = 0 \tag{6.10}$$

This relation is true for any *almost* arbitrary variation v. In fact, v must be integrable on the domain Ω, and its first derivatives must be integrable on Ω. The space of functions meeting these requirements is known as the Sobolev space $H^1(\Omega)$. So formally, v belongs to the Sobolev space:

$$v \in H^1(\Omega) \tag{6.11}$$

Moreover, because the value of u is given at the boundary, v must be zero at the boundary. Formally, v is in the Sobolev space:

$$v \in H_0^1(\Omega) \tag{6.12}$$

6.2 Alternative Route to Variational Form

The point is that the variational form

$$k \int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla v \, dA - \int_\Omega f v \, dA = 0 \qquad \forall v \in H_0^1(\Omega) \tag{6.13}$$

may be easier to solve than the original energy functional:

$$k \frac{1}{2} \int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2 \, dA - \int_\Omega f u \, dA = 0 \tag{6.14}$$

However, the variational form can be derived by other means. In fact, there are variational formulations for which there is *no* corresponding functional to minimize. So in a sense the variational formulation is more fundamental than the calculus of variations.

To illustrate: The functional $\frac{1}{2} \int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2 \, dA$ is known as Dirichlet's energy functional. A solution u that minimizes the functional is *also* a solution to the Laplace equation $\nabla^2 u = 0$. This energy functional can be put into the variational form $\int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla v \, dA$ by using the calculus of variations. However, the variational form $\int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla v \, dA$ can also be derived directly from the Laplace equation.

u minimizing $\frac{1}{2} \int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2 \, dA$ also satisfies $\int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla v \, dA = 0$ iff $\nabla^2 u = 0$

We shall use this alternative derivation as part of our homogenization procedure. We bootstrap by building up from simpler cases: First, we derive the variational form $-\int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla g \, dA = \int_\Omega gf \, dA$ directly from the Poisson equation $\nabla^2 u = f$, which we can think of as the x velocity equation of Stokes flow with the pressure gradient given as (scalar) f.

Note on notation: In an integral such as $\int_\Omega gf \, dA$, the integration measure dA is implied by the subscript Ω denoting integration over the domain. Therefore, to improve readability – without loss of clarity – we shall usually drop the integration measures (such as dA) from the integrals.

6.2.1 Variational Form of Poisson Equation inspired by Stokes Flow

Here we derive the variational form $-\int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla g = \int_\Omega gf$ directly from the Poisson equation $\nabla^2 u = f$. This is the x velocity equation of Stokes flow with the pressure gradient given as scalar f, and the no-slip boundary condition.

Before beginning, we recall a vector identity. For scalars g and u:

$$g\nabla^2 u = \nabla \cdot (g\nabla u) - \nabla u \cdot \nabla g \tag{6.15}$$

On some domain Ω, as in Figure (6.8), the Poisson equation holds:

$$\nabla^2 u = f \qquad \text{on } \Omega \tag{6.16}$$

Figure 6.8: A domain Ω with boundary Γ.

We introduce a *test function* g, from the appropriate Sobolev space: g and its first derivatives are integrable on Ω, and g is zero on the boundary Γ:

$$g \in H_0^1(\Omega) \qquad (g = 0 \text{ on } \Gamma) \tag{6.17}$$

We multiply the Poisson equation by the test function g:

$$g\nabla^2 u = gf \tag{6.18}$$

and integrate over the domain Ω:

$$\int_\Omega g\nabla^2 u = \int_\Omega gf \tag{6.19}$$

then substitute $g\nabla^2 u = \nabla \cdot (g\nabla u) - \nabla u \cdot \nabla g$:

$$\int_\Omega \nabla \cdot (g\nabla u) - \int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla g = \int_\Omega gf \tag{6.20}$$

Recall the Divergence Theorem: $$\int_\Omega \nabla \cdot \vec{a} = \int_\Gamma \vec{a} \cdot \vec{n} \tag{6.21}$$

Therefore the first term of Eq. (6.20) is:

$$\int_\Omega \nabla \cdot (g\nabla u) = \int_\Gamma (g\nabla u) \cdot \vec{n} = \int_\Gamma g(\nabla u \cdot \vec{n}) = \int_\Gamma g\frac{\partial u}{\partial n} \tag{6.22}$$

Now the test function g was defined to be zero on Γ, thus

$$\int_\Omega \nabla \cdot (g\nabla u) = \int_\Gamma g\frac{\partial u}{\partial n} = 0 \tag{6.23}$$

This leaves finally:

$$-\int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla g = \int_\Omega gf \tag{6.24}$$

which closely resembles the variational form derived from the energy functional.

6.2.2 Variational Form of Poisson Equation inspired by Stokes Flow with Slip

We now progress to the variational form of the Poisson equation inspired by Stokes flow over a flat boundary with Navier slip.

On the domain Ω, the Poisson equation holds:

$$\nabla^2 u = f \qquad \text{on } \Omega \tag{6.25}$$

Now the boundary of the entire domain, Γ, must be split up into the *bottom* boundary Γ_b, and the rest of the boundary, Γ_0, as shown in Figure (6.9). The bottom boundary Γ_b is the solid surface with slip. The boundary condition on Γ_b has the form of Navier slip:

$$u = b\frac{\partial u}{\partial n} \qquad \text{on } \Gamma_b \tag{6.26}$$

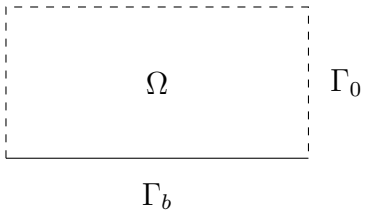


Figure 6.9: Domain Ω with slip boundary Γ_b and remainder of boundary Γ_0.

Now care must be taken to choose the appropriate function space for our test function. As before, the test function and its first derivatives must be integrable on Ω. But now, g must vanish on all of the boundary *except* the bottom boundary Γ_b:

$$g \in H^1_{\Gamma_b}(\Omega) = \{g \in H^1(\Omega) : g = 0 \text{ on } \Gamma_0\} \quad (g \neq 0 \text{ on } \Gamma_b) \tag{6.27}$$

Multiply by g and integrate over Ω:

$$\int_\Omega g\nabla^2 u = \int_\Omega gf \tag{6.28}$$

ending up with

$$\int_\Gamma g\frac{\partial u}{\partial n} - \int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla g = \int_\Omega gf \tag{6.29}$$

Now, $g = 0$ on all of Γ except the bottom boundary, so:

$$\int_\Gamma g\frac{\partial u}{\partial n} = \int_{\Gamma_b} g\frac{\partial u}{\partial n} \tag{6.30}$$

The slip condition on Γ_b implies:

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial n} = \frac{1}{b}u \tag{6.31}$$

So we substitute this, to get our variational form:

$$\int_{\Gamma_b} g\frac{1}{b}u - \int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla g = \int_\Omega gf \tag{6.32}$$

6.3 Variational Form of Stokes Flow with Tensor Slip

6.3.1 Tensor Identities

Before deriving the variational formulation of our full model of 3-D flow with tensorial slip, we define the tensor double dot product and recall a tensor identity.

Tensor Double Dot Product

The double dot product of two tensors, also known as the Frobenius inner product, is a generalization of the vector inner product:

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{bmatrix}, \quad Z = \begin{bmatrix} x & y \\ z & w \end{bmatrix}, \quad A : Z = ax + by + cz + dw \tag{6.33}$$

Tensor Identity with Deformation Rate Tensor

In Appendix E, we prove the following identity:

$$\nabla^2 \vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} = \nabla \cdot ((\nabla \vec{u} + \nabla \vec{u}^T) \cdot \vec{g}) - 2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) \tag{6.34}$$

This identity assumes $\nabla \cdot \vec{u} = 0$.

6.3.2 Variational Form of Stokes Flow with Tensor Slip

We have a domain Ω, the boundary of which is made up of two parts, Γ_b and Γ_0, as shown in Figure (6.10). On the domain Ω we have incompressible Stokes flow:

$$\nabla^2 \vec{u} = \frac{1}{\mu} \nabla p \tag{6.35}$$

$$\nabla \cdot \vec{u} = 0 \tag{6.36}$$

On the rough boundary Γ_b we have the tensor slip condition:

$$\frac{1}{b}\vec{u} = (\nabla \vec{u} + \nabla \vec{u}^T) \cdot \vec{n} \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{1}{b}\vec{u} = 2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) \cdot \vec{n} \tag{6.37}$$

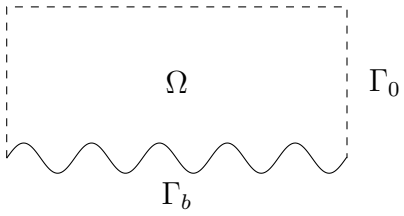


Figure 6.10: Domain Ω with rough slip boundary Γ_b and remainder of boundary Γ_0.

We introduce an arbitrary test function $\vec{g}$ from the appropriate Sobolev space:

$$\vec{g} \in H^1_{\Gamma_b}(\Omega) = \{\vec{g} \in H^1(\Omega), \quad \nabla \cdot \vec{g} = 0 \text{ in } \Omega, \quad \vec{g} = 0 \text{ on } \Gamma_0\} \tag{6.38}$$

We take the dot product of the Stokes PDE with $\vec{g}$:

$$\nabla^2 \vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} = \frac{1}{\mu} \nabla p \cdot \vec{g} \tag{6.39}$$

and integrate over the domain:

$$\int_\Omega \nabla^2 \vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} = \frac{1}{\mu} \int_\Omega \nabla p \cdot \vec{g} \tag{6.40}$$

Substitute $\nabla^2\vec{u}\cdot\vec{g} = \nabla\cdot(2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{g}) - 2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g})$, (the tensor identity Equation (6.34)):

$$\int_\Omega \nabla\cdot(2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{g}) - 2\int_\Omega \mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) = \frac{1}{\mu}\int_\Omega \nabla p\cdot\vec{g} \tag{6.41}$$

By the Divergence Theorem:

$$\int_\Omega \nabla\cdot(2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{g}) = \int_\Gamma (2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{g})\cdot\vec{n} \tag{6.42}$$

and $\mathbf{E}$ is symmetric, so:

$$\int_\Gamma (2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{g})\cdot\vec{n} = \int_\Gamma (2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})^T\cdot\vec{n})\cdot\vec{g} = \int_\Gamma (2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{n})\cdot\vec{g} \tag{6.43}$$

The boundary integral can be split into separate integrals over Γ_b and Γ_0.

$$\int_\Gamma (2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{n})\cdot\vec{g} = \int_{\Gamma_b} (2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{n})\cdot\vec{g} + \int_{\Gamma_0} (2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{n})\cdot\vec{g} \tag{6.44}$$

Now, $\vec{g} = 0$ on Γ_0, so $\int_{\Gamma_0}(2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{n})\cdot\vec{g}$ vanishes.

While on Γ_b, the slip condition holds. So we substitute the tensor slip boundary condition $2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{n} = \frac{1}{b}\vec{u}$, (Equation (6.37)):

$$\int_{\Gamma_b} (2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{n})\cdot\vec{g} = \int_{\Gamma_b} \frac{1}{b}\vec{u}\cdot\vec{g} \tag{6.45}$$

Therefore:

$$\int_\Gamma (2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{n})\cdot\vec{g} = \int_\Gamma \frac{1}{b}\vec{u}\cdot\vec{g} \tag{6.46}$$

Thus:

$$\int_\Omega \nabla\cdot(2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u})\cdot\vec{g}) = \int_\Gamma \frac{1}{b}\vec{u}\cdot\vec{g} \tag{6.47}$$

Hence the variational formulation for Stokes flow with tensor slip is:

$$\int_\Gamma \frac{1}{b}\vec{u}\cdot\vec{g} = 2\int_\Omega \mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) + \frac{1}{\mu}\int_\Omega \nabla p\cdot\vec{g} \tag{6.48}$$

6.4 Weak Convergence

Homogenizing our variational formulation involves setting up sequences of functions, taking the limits of those sequences, and exploiting the fact that periodic functions weakly converge to their mean. Therefore, in this section, we explain the types of sequences we shall use, and give an explanation of weak convergence.

6.4.1 Sequence of Functions

Consider a function, say $f(x) = \sin(x)$, with an additional parameter n, where n is a positive integer. For example:

$$f_n = \frac{1}{n}\sin(x) \tag{6.49}$$

For each $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ we have a new function. Thus we have a *sequence* of functions, indexed by n. The first three are shown in Figure (6.11).

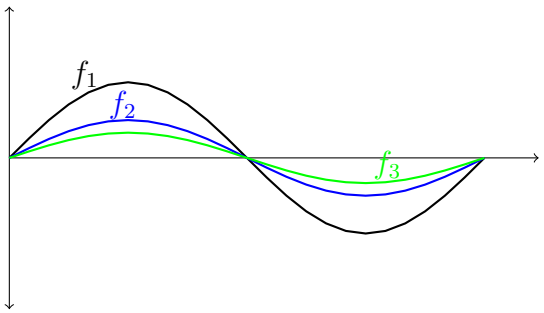


Figure 6.11: The first 3 functions of the sequence defined in Equation (6.49).

As $n \to \infty$, a sequence of functions may converge to a limit. (Or not.) A function f_n in the sequence may be made arbitrarily 'close to' the limit function, by simply making n large enough. (All subsequent functions after f_n are at least as close.)

The functions, and the limit function, are points in a function space. We need to define a 'distance' between two points, that is, the notion of a function being 'close to' another function.

6.4.2 Strong Convergence

In a vector space, the distance between two points $\vec{a}$ and $\vec{b}$ is found by finding the difference vector $\vec{b} - \vec{a}$, and calculating its length, the norm

$$\|\vec{b} - \vec{a}\| = \sqrt{(\vec{b} - \vec{a}) \cdot (\vec{b} - \vec{a})} \tag{6.50}$$

How do we extend this simple Pythagorean calculation to vectors of *infinite* dimension? For the components a_i of an infinite-dimensional vector, the index i has an infinite domain, so the components can be thought of as a function $a(i)$ on a continuum. So the dot product $\vec{a} \cdot \vec{a}$ naturally extends to become the square integral:

$$\text{Inner Product } \vec{a} \cdot \vec{a} = \int |a(x)|^2 \, dx, \quad \text{Norm } \|\vec{a}\| = \sqrt{\vec{a} \cdot \vec{a}} \tag{6.51}$$

Coming from the other direction, the space of functions now has a natural inner product: $\langle a, b \rangle = \int f \bar{g} \, dx$ which for $\langle a, a \rangle$ is the same as the square integral above.

The space of functions that are square-integrable, together with the inner product defined above, is the Lebesgue space L^2. Our sequence of functions naturally live in this space. We now have a natural notion of the 'closeness' of a function to another: roughly speaking, the area *between* the functions.

The sequence of functions **strongly converges** to the limit function f if:

$$\|f_n - f\| \to 0 \qquad \text{as} \qquad n \to \infty \tag{6.52}$$

Explicitly:

$$\int |f_n - f|^2 \, dx \to 0 \qquad \text{as} \qquad n \to \infty \tag{6.53}$$

This is notated:

$$f_n \to f \tag{6.54}$$

6.4.3 Weak Convergence

Consider a sequence of functions defined by:

$$f_n = \sin(nx) \tag{6.55}$$

the first three functions of which appear in Figure (6.12).

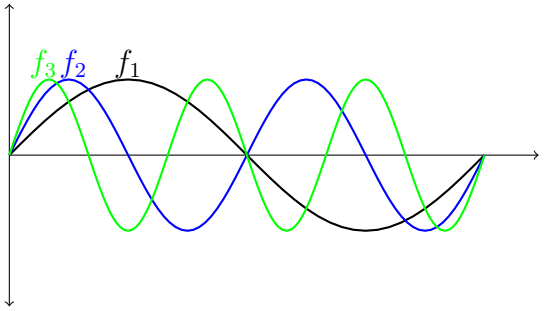


Figure 6.12: The first three functions in the sequence $\sin(nx)$.

As n increases, the period of the sine wave gets smaller and smaller, but the amplitude is unchanged. In the limit as $n \to \infty$, the waveform gets infinitely 'spiky'. What does the sequence converge to? There is no intuitive sense of the sinewave sequence getting 'closer to' some limit function. In fact, the sequence does not strongly converge.

However, there is a sense in which the function sequence converges.

We multiply each function in the sequence by an arbitrary test function g, and integrate, thus creating a sequence of integrals:

$$\int g f_n \, dx \tag{6.56}$$

If the sequence of integrals (strongly) converges to a limit integral:

$$\int g f_n \, dx \to \int g f \, dx \tag{6.57}$$

then we say that f_n **weakly converges** to f, and the 'limit function' f appearing in the limit integral is known as the **weak limit.** This is also written:

$$f_n \rightharpoonup f \tag{6.58}$$

What is the weak limit f? If f_n is a sequence of periodic functions (like our sine wave example) then f is the **mean** of f_n, denoted $\langle f_n \rangle$.

6.4.4 Periodic Functions Weakly Converge to their Mean

It is a 'standard result' that periodic functions weakly converge to their mean. In a 2002 paper [34], Lukkassen and Wall state: "We have not found proofs of [this] fact in the literature. The aim of this paper is to present such proofs." Their paper provides a rigorous proof (and generalization) of this proof. In Appendix F, however, we present a simple intuitive proof, suitable for this thesis.

We show that periodic functions weakly converge to their mean:

$$\int g f_n \, dx \to \int g \langle f \rangle \, dx \tag{6.59}$$

We shall use this incredibly useful result to homogenize our variational form.

6.5 Homogenizing the Variational Form

Our variational form:

$$\int_\Gamma \frac{1}{b}\vec{u}\cdot\vec{g} = 2\int_\Omega \mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) + \frac{1}{\mu}\int_\Omega \nabla p\cdot\vec{g} \tag{6.60}$$

can now be homogenized. The homogenization procedure we shall employ embodies two key concepts.

The first key concept is to model the slip boundary as a periodic function, and to set up a sequence of such functions, thus creating a sequence of boundaries. Each boundary corresponds to a domain, so there is a sequence of domains. Equation (6.60) holds on each domain, so we have a sequence of systems to solve, and therefore a sequence of velocity and pressure field solutions. The n-th variational formulation (that holds on the n-th domain with n-th boundary) contains slip length function b_n and is satisfied by velocity field $\vec{u}_n$ and pressure field p_n:

$$\int_{\Gamma_n} \frac{1}{b_n}\vec{u}_n\cdot\vec{g}_n = 2\int_{\Omega_n} \mathbf{E}(\vec{u}_n) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}_n) + \frac{1}{\mu}\int_{\Omega_n} \nabla p_n\cdot\vec{g}_n \tag{6.61}$$

The second key concept is to define the sequence such that it converges to a *limit* system. The idea is that while it may be difficult to solve any system in the sequence, the limit system is easy to solve. We could define a sequence of boundaries such that the period and amplitude of the surface function halve with each increment of n. We similarly reduce the period of the slip length function with each increment of n. The amplitude of b remains unchanged. Then, the sequence of systems converges to a system with a flat plane boundary with a limiting slip length of the same order as that in the sequence systems. The overall size P of the domain also remains approximately constant for all n. This is illustrated in Figure (6.13).

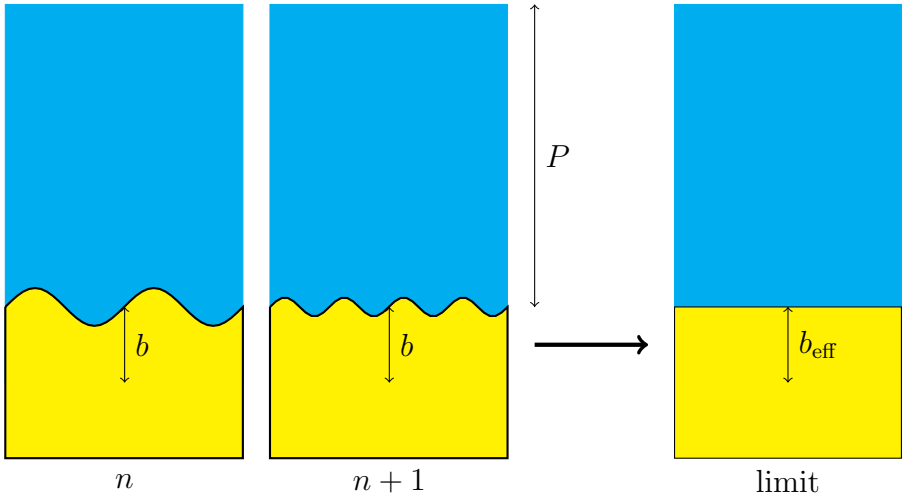


Figure 6.13: A sequence of domains, where the period and amplitude of the boundary halve with each increment of n, converging on a limit domain.

Sequence of Boundaries

The physical boundary is a periodic function $h(x, y)$. (For simplicity we shall illustrate it as a sine function, but it need not be.) The slip length is a periodic function $b(x, y)$ with the **same period** as $h(x, y)$.

Define a sequence of surface functions by:

$$h_n = \frac{1}{n} h(nx, ny) \tag{6.62}$$

As $n \to \infty$, the amplitude of $h_n \to 0$. This ensures convergence to a plane. Similarly, define a sequence of slip functions by:

$$b_n = b(nx, ny) \tag{6.63}$$

In this case, as n increases, the period shortens, but the amplitude of b_n does **not** decrease. We have a sequence of boundaries Γ_n that (strongly) converges to the flat x, y plane, as shown in Figure (6.14).

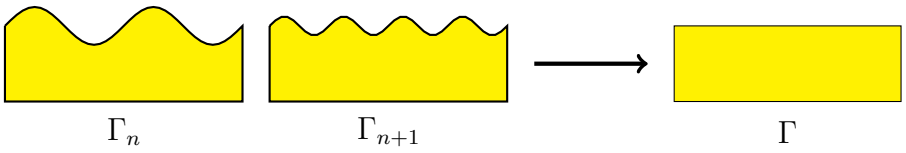


Figure 6.14: The sequence of boundaries converges to the flat x, y plane.

Sequence of Gradient Functions

Consider our definition of the sequence of surfaces: $h_n = \frac{1}{n}h(nx, ny)$. As n increases, the period and amplitude reduce by the **same factor.** This means that for a point on the surface at a given fraction of the period, the slope at that point does not change with n. This is best explained by example. If the the base function is simple sinusoids in x and y: $h(x, y) = \sin(x)\sin(y)$, then

$$h_n = \frac{1}{n}\sin(nx)\sin(ny) \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{cases} \partial_x h_n = \cos(nx)\sin(ny) \\ \partial_y h_n = \cos(ny)\sin(nx) \end{cases} \tag{6.64}$$

Clearly, the amplitudes of $\nabla h_n = (\partial_x h_n, \partial_y h_n)$ over one period do not change with increasing n. However, with increasing n, the period reduces, leading to a more and more 'spiky' function. As shown in Appendix F, such a sequence of functions weakly converges to its mean.

Slip Integral

Let us look more closely at the integral containing the slip length term, on the left-hand-side of Equation (6.60). The integral is over a surface; each infinitesimal area element dA is the area of the tangent plane to $h(x, y)$. Specifically:

$$dA = \sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}\, dxdy \tag{6.65}$$

Furthermore, the velocity function on the boundary is $\vec{u}(x, y, h)$. Similarly, for the test function $\vec{g}(x, y, h)$. Therefore, the slip integral is explicitly:

$$\int_\Gamma \frac{1}{b}\vec{u}\cdot\vec{g}\, dA = \int_\Gamma \frac{1}{b(x,y)}\vec{u}(x, y, h)\cdot\vec{g}(x, y, h)\, \sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}\, dxdy \tag{6.66}$$

For the n-th domain in the sequence, the slip integral is:

$$\int_{\Gamma_n} \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h_n|^2}}{b_n}\, \vec{u}_n(x,y,h_n)\cdot\vec{g}_n(x,y,h_n)\, dxdy \tag{6.67}$$

As illustrated by the example of Equation (6.64), the magnitude of ∇h_n does not change with n. Thus the the magnitude of $\sqrt{1+|\nabla h_n|^2}$ does not change with increasing n. Furthermore, the slip function b_n is constructed to exhibit the same behaviour: unchanging amplitude with decreasing period. Therefore, the compound function $\sqrt{1+|\nabla h_n|^2}/b_n$ exhibits this common behaviour, getting 'spikier' with increasing n. This type of sequence of functions weakly converges to its mean:

$$\int_{\Gamma_n} \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h_n|^2}}{b_n}\, \vec{g}_n\, dxdy \to \int_{\Gamma} \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}}{b} \right\rangle \vec{g}\, dxdy \tag{6.68}$$

(Where the test function strongly converges: $\vec{g}_n(x,y,h_n)\to\vec{g}(x,y,0)$.)

We add the velocity term $\vec{u}_n(x,y,h_n)$ to the above weak integral, to get the full slip integral. Since the boundary converges to the flat x,y plane, we expect the velocity term to strongly converge to a single *constant* velocity on the flat limit boundary:

$$\vec{u}_n(x,y,h_n)\to\vec{u}(x,y,0) \qquad \text{as} \quad n\to\infty \tag{6.69}$$

Therefore, the integrand with the velocity term still weakly converges to its mean:

$$\int_{\Gamma_n} \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h_n|^2}}{b_n}\, \vec{u}_n\cdot\vec{g}_n\, dxdy \to \int_{\Gamma} \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}}{b} \right\rangle \vec{u}\cdot\vec{g}\, dxdy \tag{6.70}$$

Sequence of Variational Formulations and its Limit

Thus we have a sequence of variational formulations:

$$\int_{\Gamma_n} \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h_n|^2}}{b_n}\, \vec{u}_n\cdot\vec{g}_n\, dxdy = 2\int_{\Omega_n} \mathbf{E}(\vec{u}_n):\mathbf{E}(\vec{g}_n) + \frac{1}{\mu}\int_{\Omega_n} \nabla p_n\cdot\vec{g}_n \tag{6.71}$$

which strongly converges to:

$$\int_{\Gamma} \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}}{b} \right\rangle \vec{u}\cdot\vec{g}\, dxdy = 2\int_{\Omega} \mathbf{E}(\vec{u}):\mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) + \frac{1}{\mu}\int_{\Omega} \nabla p\cdot\vec{g} \tag{6.72}$$

6.5.1 Convert to Classical Formulation

The limit variational formulation Equation (6.72) corresponds to the classical formulation with

$$\nabla^2 \vec{u} = \frac{1}{\mu} \nabla p \tag{6.73}$$

on the domain, while on the boundary Γ_b we would have the tensor slip condition:

$$\left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}}{b} \right\rangle \vec{u} = 2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) \cdot \vec{n} \tag{6.74}$$

This slip boundary condition defines our effective slip length:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{6.75}$$

This is the central result of this thesis. It was published in 2012 [36].

6.5.2 Interpretation

We now discuss a physical interpretation of the result. Note that the integral $\int_\Omega \sqrt{1+|\partial_x h|^2}\, dx$ is the **arc length** of the function h over the domain Ω. Extending to a three-dimensional surface, $\int_\Omega \sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}\, dxdy$ is the area of the surface function $h(x,y)$.

Hence, our effective slip is the **harmonic mean** of the local slip length, **weighted** by the fluid-solid contact area. See Figure (6.15).

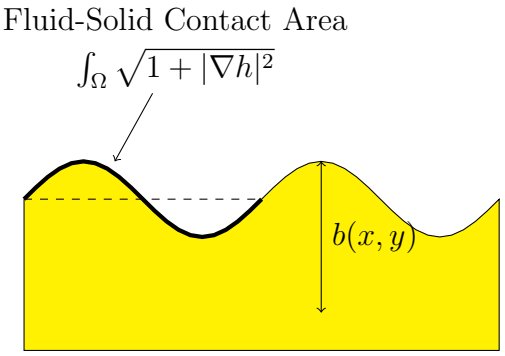


Figure 6.15: b_{eff} incorporates the contact area between liquid and solid.

If the surface is flat, then b_{eff} is simply the harmonic mean of the intrinsic slip length:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{6.76}$$

If the surface is a flat **binary** surface, comprising discrete areas of high-slip surface and low-slip surface, with high-slip regions occupying fraction ϕ of the surface, then:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left[\phi \frac{1}{b_{\text{high}}} + (1-\phi)\frac{1}{b_{\text{low}}} \right]^{-1} \tag{6.77}$$

as first proposed by Cottin-Bizonne *et al* in 2004 [11].

6.5.3 Applicability

The effective slip length derived via homogenization is the **limiting** slip length as the period of the surface variation tends to zero. A real surface obviously has a finite period of surface variation. The effective slip length can in principle be measured experimentally.

The critical question is:

For what range of surfaces is the homogenized slip length a good approximation to the measured slip length?

Equivalently, when is the flow over a rough, heterogeneous surface **close to** the flow over an effective homogenized surface?

One approach to answer this is to ask: when is a rough surface close to the limit surface? A reasonable answer is: when the **period L is small compared to other length scales.** There are two other length scales, the domain size P and slip length b. Therefore, we expect Equation (6.75) to be a good approximation to measured slip length when:

$$L \ll b, P \tag{6.78}$$

In our numerical testing (described in Chapter 8), we discover that our homogenized effective slip length (Eq. (6.75)) is a surprisingly good approximation even when slip lengths are of the same order as the period:

$$L \sim b \ll P \tag{6.79}$$

Chapter 7

Perturbative Effective Slip Lengths

We derived an expression for the effective slip length using the homogenization technique; this is presented in the previous chapter. However, prior to doing this, we derived an expression for the effective slip length using a different technique – the method of perturbation. The homogenized expression for b_{eff} holds for a non-flat surface, while the perturbative expression assumes a flat surface. The derivation of b_{eff} by perturbation methods is presented here.

7.0.4 Model

We model the fluid system as incompressible, Stokes 'creeping' flow, with velocity vector $\vec{u} = (u, v, w)$:

$$\nabla^2 \vec{u} = \frac{1}{\mu} \nabla p \tag{7.1}$$

$$\nabla \cdot \vec{u} = 0 \tag{7.2}$$

The bottom solid surface is modeled as the $z = 0$ plane. The surface is **flat,** so simple Navier slip holds:

$$u(0) = b(x, y)\frac{\partial u}{\partial z}|_{z=0} \tag{7.3}$$

The intrinsic slip length of the surface $b(x, y)$ is a rectangular-periodic function, with period L in the x direction.

The flow is Couette-like, shear-driven by a driving plate at height P above the surface, with a constant driving velocity of u_P.

$$\vec{u}(x, y, P) = (u_P, 0, 0) \tag{7.4}$$

Since flow is generally in the x direction, driven by shear only, there is no pressure gradient, and the pressure has the same x-periodicity as the surface:

$$p(x, y, z) = p(x + L, y, z) \tag{7.5}$$

Elements of the model are summarized in the schematic of Figure (7.1).

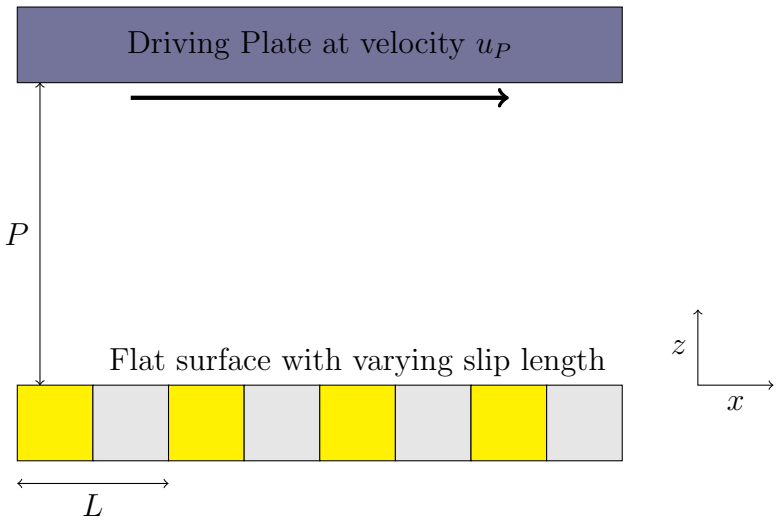


Figure 7.1: The model for the perturbation analyses.

7.1 Perturbing Plug Flow

7.1.1 Plug Flow

Our method is to perturb an exact case of fluid flow known as plug flow, which we shall describe forthwith. If fluid is shear-driven by a constant-velocity plate at the top boundary, and experiences **perfect slip** at the bottom boundary:

$$u(x, y, \text{top}) = u_P \text{ (constant)} \tag{7.6}$$

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial z}|_{z=0} = 0 \tag{7.7}$$

then the fluid has no resistance at the bottom, so the entire bulk quickly accelerates up to velocity of the driving plate. So fluid flows as a **plug** of fluid all at the same velocity. This flow solution is known as plug flow, and is shown in Figure (7.2).

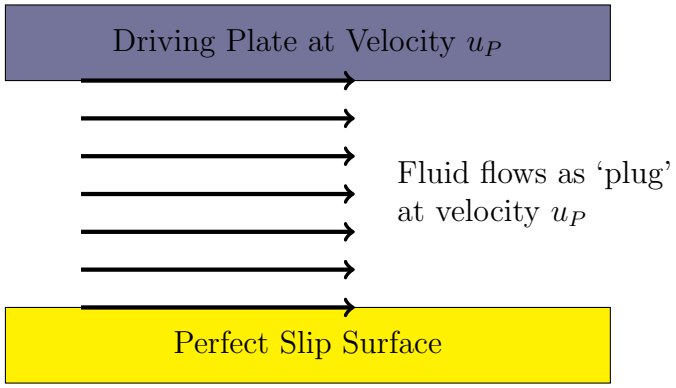


Figure 7.2: Plug flow.

7.1.2 Perturbed Plug Flow

We now consider shear-driven flow that is perturbed slightly away from true plug flow. What does it mean for a flow to be *close to* plug flow?

In true plug flow, the velocity at the bottom of the fluid is the *same as* the driving velocity at the top of the fluid u_P. So, fluid flow is *close to* plug flow if the bottom velocity is *close to* the driving velocity u_P. Such plug-like flow is shown in Figure (7.3).

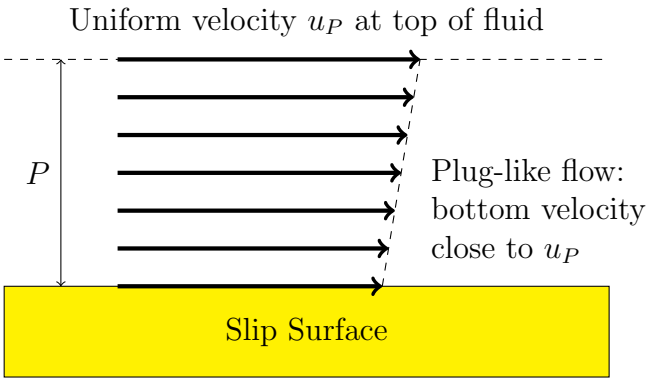


Figure 7.3: Plug-like flow.

If the slip surface is heterogeneous, then the slip velocity (at the bottom of the fluid) may vary across the surface. The flow may be described as plug-like if the *lowest* slip velocity is still close to u_P. Since the lowest slip velocity is expected to occur over the region with the lowest intrinsic slip length, $b_{\min}$, flow is plug-like if $b_{\min}$ is sufficiently large. By simple geometry, flow can be described as plug-like if $b_{\min}$ is large compared to driving height P, as shown in Figure (7.4).

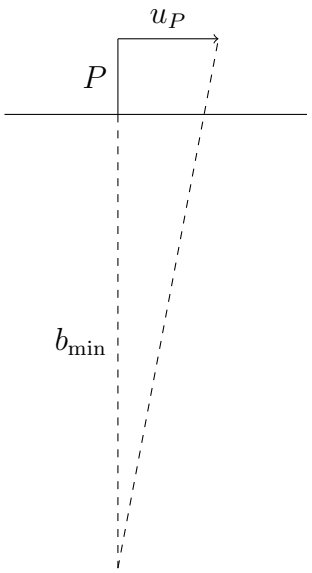


Figure 7.4: Geometry of plug-like flow.

Thus, a flow may be described as perturbed away from pure plug flow if the ratio $P/b_{\min}$ is small compared to unity. The lengths in this dimensionless ratio are fixed, measurable lengths of the physical system. Hence, we can carry out a formal perturbation analysis with the small perturbation parameter:

$$\epsilon = \frac{P}{b_{\min}} \tag{7.8}$$

7.1.3 Requirement that $L \ll P$

The surface is patterned with a rectangular-periodic variation in slip length with period L in the x direction. The surface patterning causes a perturbation to the otherwise-laminar velocity profile of plug flow. Due to the diffusion of momentum, the perturbation decays with height, so that the velocity solution converges to smooth laminar flow, as suggested in Figure (7.5).

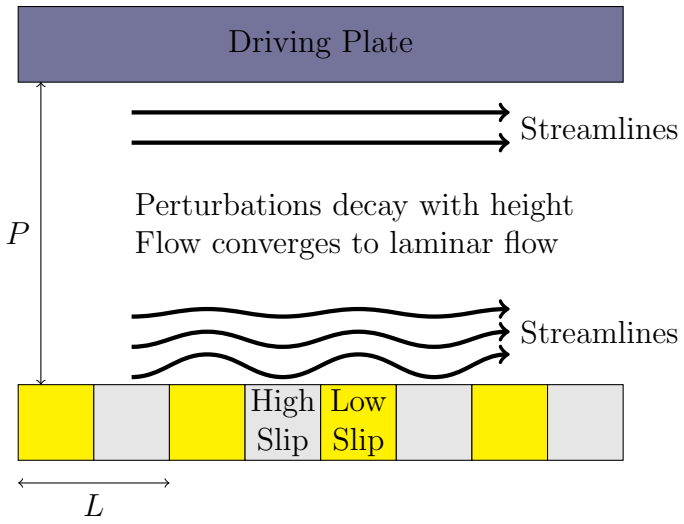


Figure 7.5: Plug-like flow over patterned slip with $L < P$.

Calculating the effective slip length involves finding the shear rate at the driving plate, which is assumed to be constant over the plate. For the shear rate to be constant, the flow near the plate must be unperturbed. In our analysis, we find that elements of the velocity perturbation are of order $\exp(-P/L)$ at $z = P$. These must be negliglible, which requires that:

$$L \ll P \tag{7.9}$$

7.1.4 Perturbed Navier Slip

The Navier slip condition relates the shear rate to the slip velocity. With ϵ, we can express the slip condition as a perturbation away from shear-free plug flow. Multiplying both sides by ϵ gives:

$$\frac{P}{b_{\min}} b(x,y) \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} = \epsilon u(0) \tag{7.10}$$

Define the normalised slip length:

$$\hat{b} = \frac{b(x,y)}{b_{\min}}, \qquad \hat{b} \geq 1 \tag{7.11}$$

So the perturbed slip condition is:

$$P\hat{b} \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} = \epsilon u(0) \tag{7.12}$$

7.1.5 Perturbation Expansion

The velocity solution to Stokes flow is assumed to be expressible as a power series in ϵ:

$$\vec{u} = \vec{u}_0 + \epsilon \vec{u}_1 + O(\epsilon^2) \tag{7.13}$$

where

$$\vec{u}_0 + \epsilon \vec{u}_1 = (u_0, v_0, w_0) + \epsilon(u_1, v_1, w_1) \tag{7.14}$$

The pressure is similarly expressed as a power series in ϵ:

$$p = p_0 + \epsilon p_1 + O(\epsilon^2) \tag{7.15}$$

Both are inserted into the equations of Stokes flow with perturbed slip, giving to first order:

$$\nabla^2 \vec{u}_0 + \epsilon \nabla^2 \vec{u}_1 = \frac{1}{\mu} \nabla p_0 + \epsilon \frac{1}{\mu} \nabla p_1 \tag{7.16}$$

$$\nabla \cdot \vec{u}_0 + \epsilon \nabla \cdot \vec{u}_1 = 0 \tag{7.17}$$

$$p_0(x, y, z) + \epsilon p_1(x, y, z) = p_0(x + L, y, z) + \epsilon p_1(x + L, y, z) \tag{7.18}$$

$$u_0(x, y, P) + \epsilon u_1(x, y, P) = u_P \tag{7.19}$$

$$P\hat{b} \frac{\partial u_0}{\partial z} + \epsilon P\hat{b} \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial z} = \epsilon u_0 \tag{7.20}$$

7.1.6 Zeroth Order

By construction, setting ϵ to zero gives shear-free flow:

$$\nabla^2 \vec{u}_0 = \frac{1}{\mu} \nabla p_0 \tag{7.21}$$

$$u_0(x, y, P) = u_P \tag{7.22}$$

$$\frac{\partial u_0}{\partial z}|_{z=0} = 0 \tag{7.23}$$

whose solution is plug flow. That is, $u_0(x, y, z) = u_P$, constant everywhere.

7.1.7 First Order

Cancelling the zeroth order terms and dividing by ϵ gives the first order problem:

$$\nabla^2 \vec{u}_1 = \frac{1}{\mu} \nabla p_1 \tag{7.24}$$

$$\nabla \cdot \vec{u}_1 = 0 \tag{7.25}$$

$$p_1(x, y, z) = p_1(x + L, y, z) \tag{7.26}$$

$$u_1(x, y, P) = 0 \tag{7.27}$$

$$P\hat{b} \frac{\partial u_1}{\partial z}|_{z=0} = u_0 = u_P \tag{7.28}$$

Note that the zeroth order solution appears in the slip condition.

Eliminate Pressure with Vorticity

The standard way to eliminate the pressure is to use the vorticity $\nabla \times \vec{u}$. Taking the curl of both sides of the Stokes equation gives:

$$\nabla \times \nabla^2 \vec{u}_1 = \nabla \times \frac{1}{\mu} \nabla p_1 \tag{7.29}$$

The right hand side is identically zero, leaving $\nabla \times \nabla^2 \vec{u}_1 = 0$. Recall that the vector Laplacian is:

$$\nabla^2 \vec{u}_1 = \left(\nabla^2 u_1, \nabla^2 v_1, \nabla^2 w_1 \right) \tag{7.30}$$

so that $\nabla \times \nabla^2 \vec{u}_1 = 0$ is

$$\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial y} \nabla^2 w_1 - \frac{\partial}{\partial z} \nabla^2 v_1, \frac{\partial}{\partial z} \nabla^2 u_1 - \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \nabla^2 w_1, \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \nabla^2 v_1 - \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \nabla^2 u_1 \right) = (0, 0, 0) \tag{7.31}$$

This gives three PDEs. It turns out that the successfull strategy is to use the last two. Expanding out the Laplacian operator, these are:

$$\frac{\partial^3 u_1}{\partial z \partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^3 u_1}{\partial z \partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^3 u_1}{\partial z^3} = \frac{\partial^3 w_1}{\partial x^3} + \frac{\partial^3 w_1}{\partial x \partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^3 w_1}{\partial x \partial z^2} \tag{7.32}$$

$$\frac{\partial^3 u_1}{\partial y \partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^3 u_1}{\partial y^3} + \frac{\partial^3 u_1}{\partial y \partial z^2} = \frac{\partial^3 v_1}{\partial x^3} + \frac{\partial^3 v_1}{\partial x \partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^3 v_1}{\partial x \partial z^2} \tag{7.33}$$

It also happens that the successful strategy is to convert the last equation into an expression in u_1 and w_1. We can do this because the incompressibility couples u, v and w. Specifically, the continuity equation $\nabla \cdot \vec{u}_1 = 0$ can be rearranged to:

$$\frac{\partial v_1}{\partial y} = -\frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x} - \frac{\partial w_1}{\partial z} \tag{7.34}$$

To use this substitution, we first differentiate the last equation with respect to y:

$$\frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^2 \partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^4} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^2 \partial z^2} = \frac{\partial^4 v_1}{\partial y \partial x^3} + \frac{\partial^4 v_1}{\partial x \partial y^3} + \frac{\partial^4 v_1}{\partial x \partial y \partial z^2} \tag{7.35}$$

then make the substitution, giving:

$$\frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^2 \partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^4} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^2 \partial z^2} = \\ -\frac{\partial^3}{\partial x^3}\left[\frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial w_1}{\partial z}\right] - \frac{\partial^3}{\partial x \partial y^2}\left[\frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial w_1}{\partial z}\right] - \frac{\partial^3}{\partial x \partial z^2}\left[\frac{\partial u_1}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial w_1}{\partial z}\right] \quad (7.36)$$

Simplified:

$$\frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial x^4} + 2\frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial x^2 \partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^4} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial x^2 \partial z^2} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^2 \partial z^2} = \\ -\frac{\partial^4 w_1}{\partial x^3 \partial z} - \frac{\partial^4 w_1}{\partial x \partial y^2 \partial z} - \frac{\partial^4 w_1}{\partial x \partial z^3} \quad (7.37)$$

Thus we have two PDEs in two variables, u_1 and w_1.

$$\frac{\partial^3 u_1}{\partial z \partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^3 u_1}{\partial z \partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^3 u_1}{\partial z^3} = \frac{\partial^3 w_1}{\partial x^3} + \frac{\partial^3 w_1}{\partial x \partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^3 w_1}{\partial x \partial z^2} \quad (7.38)$$

$$\frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial x^4} + 2\frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial x^2 \partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^4} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial x^2 \partial z^2} + \frac{\partial^4 u_1}{\partial y^2 \partial z^2} = -\frac{\partial^4 w_1}{\partial x^3 \partial z} - \frac{\partial^4 w_1}{\partial x \partial y^2 \partial z} - \frac{\partial^4 w_1}{\partial x \partial z^3} \quad (7.39)$$

Fourier Series

Because the flow is periodic, it is natural to write u_1 as a Fourier series:

$$u_1(x, y, z) = \sum_{\vec{k}}^{\infty} U_{\vec{k}}(z) \exp(i\vec{k} \cdot \vec{r}) \quad (7.40)$$

where $\vec{r} = (x, y)$ and the wave vector $\vec{k}$ is a reciprocal lattice vector defined by integers a and b:

$$\vec{k} = (m, n) = \left(\frac{2\pi a}{L}, \frac{2\pi b}{L}\right), \qquad k = \frac{2\pi q}{L} \quad (7.41)$$

$$\text{where} \quad k^2 = m^2 + n^2, \quad q^2 = a^2 + b^2 \quad (7.42)$$

The Fourier coefficient is:

$$U_{\vec{k}}(z) = \frac{1}{L^2} \int_0^L \int_0^L u(x, y, z) \exp(i\vec{k} \cdot \vec{r})\, dxdy \quad (7.43)$$

Similarly for w_1:

$$w_1(x, y, z) = \sum_{\vec{k}}^{\infty} W_{\vec{k}}(z) \exp(i\vec{k} \cdot \vec{r}) \tag{7.44}$$

The two Fourier expansions for velocity are inserted into the two PDEs. At this point, resulting algebra was tackled with the computer package Maple.

At length, one has two expressions that are true for arbitrary $\vec{r} = (x, y)$. As a consequence, the following two ODEs in U and W are true for all $\vec{k}$:

$$\frac{d^3U}{dz^3} - k^2\frac{dU}{dz} = i\left(\frac{d^2W}{dz^2} - k^2W\right)m \tag{7.45}$$

$$k^2\frac{d^2U}{dz^2} - k^4U = i\left(\frac{d^3W}{dz^3} - k^2\frac{dW}{dz}\right)m \tag{7.46}$$

(The parameters k and m are of course not independent.)

Solving the DEs

It turns out that a successful strategy is to solve for $W(z)$ first, then substitute the solution back into Equation (7.45), allowing us to solve for $U(z)$.

Solve for $W(z)$

After multiplying Equation (7.45) by k^2, and differentiating Equation (7.46) with respect to z, the two equations may be combined to:

$$\frac{d^4W}{dz^4} - 2k^2\frac{d^2W}{dz^2} + k^4W = 0 \tag{7.47}$$

The general solution of which is:

$$W(z) = \left(P_{\vec{k}} + Q_{\vec{k}}z\right)e^{-kz} + \left(R_{\vec{k}} + S_{\vec{k}}z\right)e^{kz} \tag{7.48}$$

Now, at the top of the fluid, flow is in the x direction only. Therefore $w_1(x, y, P) = 0$, which requires that

$$W(P) = 0 \tag{7.49}$$

At $z = P$ the e^{kz} term is $\exp(2\pi qP/L)$ where $q \geq 1$. Since we have assumed $P \gg L$, this term is large. Therefore we must have $R_{\vec{k}} = S_{\vec{k}} = 0$.

Furthermore, the bottom surface is impermeable, so $w_1(x, y, 0) = 0$, which requires that $W(0) = 0$. An immediate corollary is that $W(0) = P_{\vec{k}} = 0$. We are left with:

$$W(z) = Q_{\vec{k}} z e^{-kz} \tag{7.50}$$

Solving for $U(z)$

We insert the solution for $W(z)$ into Equation (7.46), yielding an ODE in $U(z)$:

$$\frac{d^3U}{dz^3} - k^2 \frac{dU}{dz} = iQ_{\vec{k}} m k^2 e^{-kz} \tag{7.51}$$

For non-zero k, the general solution is:

$$U_{\vec{k}}(z) = \left(P_{\vec{k}} + iQ_{\vec{k}} \frac{m}{k^2}\right) e^{-kz} + B_{\vec{k}} e^{kz} \tag{7.52}$$

For $k = 0$, the ODE reduces to:

$$\frac{d^3U}{dz^3} = 0 \tag{7.53}$$

whose solution is:

$$U_0 = A_0 + B_0 z + C_0 z^2 \tag{7.54}$$

Assemble $u_1(x, yz)$ solution

We have found the Fourier coefficients in their most general form. We now insert them into the Fourier series expression $u_1(x, y, z) = \sum_{\vec{k}}^{\infty} U_{\vec{k}}(z) \exp(i\vec{k} \cdot \vec{r})$:

$$u_1(x, y, z) = A_0 + B_0 z + C_0 z^2 + \sum_{k \neq 0} \left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz} + B_{\vec{k}} e^{kz}\right) \exp(i\vec{k} \cdot \vec{r}) \tag{7.55}$$

$$\text{where} \quad A_{\vec{k}} = \left(P_{\vec{k}} + iQ_{\vec{k}} \frac{m}{k^2}\right) \tag{7.56}$$

Use periodicity to eliminate C_0

Inserting our expression for $u_1(x, y, z)$ into the x component of the Stokes equation:

$$\frac{\partial^2 u_1}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u_1}{\partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u_1}{\partial z^2} = \frac{1}{\mu} \frac{\partial p_1}{\partial x} \tag{7.57}$$

gives:

$$-m^2 \sum_{k\neq 0} \left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz} + B_{\vec{k}} e^{kz}\right) \exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) - n^2 \sum_{k\neq 0} \left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz} + B_{\vec{k}} e^{kz}\right) \exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) + 2C_0 + k^2 \sum_{k\neq 0} \left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz} + B_{\vec{k}} e^{kz}\right) \exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) = \frac{1}{\mu}\frac{\partial p_1}{\partial x} \quad (7.58)$$

Since $k^2 = m^2 + n^2$, this reduces to:

$$2C_0 = \frac{1}{\mu}\frac{\partial p_1}{\partial x} \quad (7.59)$$

Integrate this over one period:

$$\int_0^L 2C_0 \, dx = \int_0^L \frac{1}{\mu}\frac{\partial p_1}{\partial x} \, dx \quad (7.60)$$

$$2C_0 L = \frac{1}{\mu}[p_1(L, y, z) - p_1(0, yz)] = 0 \quad (7.61)$$

The flow is shear-driven only, so the pressure is periodic: $p_1(x, y, z) = p_1(x + L, y, z)$. Therefore the right-hand side of the integral vanishes, and we are left with $C_0 = 0$.

Use top boundary condition to find A_0

At the top of the fluid, the flow is uniform laminar flow with velocity u_P in the x direction only. At this point, the zeroth order solution is exact, so the first order term vanishes:

$$u_1(x, y, P) = 0 \quad (7.62)$$

Inserting our expression gives:

$$A_0 + B_0 P + \sum_{k\neq 0} \left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kP} + B_{\vec{k}} e^{kP}\right) \exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) = 0 \quad (7.63)$$

The e^{kP} term is $\exp(2\pi qP/L)$ with $q \geq 1$. Since we have assumed $P \gg L$, this term is large. Therefore we require that $B_{\vec{k}} = 0$ for all $k \neq 0$. Conversely, the e^{-kP} term is very small. Then $A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kP}$ may be considered negligible; otherwise, we simply stipulate that $A_{\vec{k}} = 0$ for all $k \neq 0$.

Then the sum term is negligible or zero, and we are left with:

$$A_0 + B_0 P = 0 \tag{7.64}$$

from which it follows that $A_0 = -B_0 P$. Our first-order velocity term is now:

$$u_1(x, y, z) = B_0(z - P) + \sum_{k \neq 0} \left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz} \right) \exp(i\vec{k} \cdot \vec{r}) \tag{7.65}$$

Use Slip Boundary Condition to find B_0

We have found that the Fourier coefficient for $\vec{k} = (0, 0)$ is $U_0 = B_0(z - P)$. We may equate this with the formal definition:

$$U_0 = B_0(z - P) = \frac{1}{L^2} \int_0^L \int_0^L u_1(x, y, z)\, dxdy \tag{7.66}$$

and differentiate with respect to z:

$$\frac{d}{dz}(B_0 z - B_0 P) = \frac{1}{L^2} \int_0^L \int_0^L \frac{d}{dz} u_1(x, y, z)\, dxdy \tag{7.67}$$

then evaluate at $z = 0$:

$$B_0 = \frac{1}{L^2} \int_0^L \int_0^L \frac{du_1}{dz}|_{z=0}\, dxdy \tag{7.68}$$

At this point we can substitute the slip boundary condition:

$$\frac{du_1}{dz}|_{z=0} = \frac{1}{P\hat{b}} u_P \tag{7.69}$$

to get:

$$B_0 = \frac{1}{L^2} \int_0^L \int_0^L \frac{1}{P\hat{b}} u_P\, dxdy \tag{7.70}$$

The double integral is the area-weighted average:

$$B_0 = \frac{u_P}{P} \frac{1}{L^2} \int_0^L \int_0^L \frac{1}{\hat{b}}\, dxdy = \frac{u_P}{P} \left\langle \frac{1}{\hat{b}} \right\rangle \tag{7.71}$$

So the **first order velocity term** is:

$$u_1(x, y, z) = \frac{u_P}{P} \left\langle \frac{1}{\hat{b}} \right\rangle (z - P) + \sum_{k \neq 0} \left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz} \right) \exp(i\vec{k} \cdot \vec{r}) \tag{7.72}$$

7.1.8 Bolt Together Velocity Solution

We now have all the parts of the x velocity perturbaton expansion $u(x,y,z) = u_0(x,y,z) + \epsilon u_1(x,y,z)$. Bolting it together gives:

$$u(x,y,z) = u_P + \epsilon \frac{u_P}{P} \left\langle \frac{1}{\hat{b}} \right\rangle (z-P) + \epsilon \sum_{k\neq 0} \left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz} \right) \exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) \tag{7.73}$$

Recall that:

$$\epsilon = \frac{P}{b_{\min}} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \hat{b} = \frac{b}{b_{\min}} \tag{7.74}$$

therefore:

$$\epsilon \frac{u_P}{P} \left\langle \frac{1}{\hat{b}} \right\rangle = \frac{P}{b_{\min}} \frac{u_P}{P} \left\langle \frac{b_{\min}}{b} \right\rangle = u_P \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle \tag{7.75}$$

Thus, the final velocity solution is:

$$u(x,y,z) = u_P + u_P \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle (z-P) + \epsilon \sum_{k\neq 0} \left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz} \right) \exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) \tag{7.76}$$

7.1.9 Effective Slip Length

Since we know the height P and the velocity u_P of the driving plate, if we know the shear rate at the driving plate, we can calculate the effective slip length. The flow is uniform and laminar at the driving plate, so simple shear holds, and the shear rate is simply the velocity gradient $\frac{d}{dz}u$:

$$\frac{d}{dz}u(x,y,z) = u_P \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle - \epsilon \sum_{k\neq 0} \left(k A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz} \right) \exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) \tag{7.77}$$

At $z = P$, the term $e^{-kz} < \exp(-2\pi P/L)$ and is negligible since $P \gg L$. So:

$$\frac{du}{dz}|_{z=P} = u_P \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle \tag{7.78}$$

Rearranging to the familiar form of Navier slip:

$$u_P = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \frac{du}{dz}|_{z=P} \tag{7.79}$$

This defines an effective slip length:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{7.80}$$

The true slip length of the **solid surface** is less by the distance P from the driving plate to the surface:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} - P \tag{7.81}$$

This result is derived by perturbing plug flow; the smallness of the perturbation is expressed by the smallness of the ratio $P/b_{\min}$. Since $b_{\min} < \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$, the assumption $P \ll b_{\min}$ implies that

$$P \ll \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{7.82}$$

Therefore, the P may be neglected, leaving Equation (7.80).

The perturbative method has reconciled with the homogenization method: If the homogenized effective slip length formula is applied to a flat surface, it simplifies to Equation (7.80).

Equation (7.80) and its derivation by perturbation methods was published in 2008 [35].

7.2 Perturbed Couette Flow

A similar analysis can be done for perturbed Couette flow. We still assume that the height of the driving plate is much larger than the period of surface patterning :

$$P \gg L \tag{7.83}$$

In this case, flow is *close to* Couette flow if the maximum slip length $b_{\max}$ of the surface is *small* compared to the height P of the driving plate. So a suitable choice of perturbation parameter is:

$$\epsilon = \frac{b_{\max}}{P} \tag{7.84}$$

And the normalised slip length can be defined as:

$$\hat{b} = \frac{b(x,y)}{b_{\max}}, \qquad 0 \leq \hat{b} \leq 1 \tag{7.85}$$

Then both sides of the Navier slip condition can be divided by ϵ:

$$\frac{1}{\epsilon} u(x,y,0) = \frac{P}{b_{\max}} b(x,y) \frac{\partial u}{\partial z}|_{z=0} \tag{7.86}$$

So the perturbed slip condition is:

$$u(x,y,0) = \epsilon P \hat{b} \frac{\partial u}{\partial z}|_{z=0} \tag{7.87}$$

As before, the velocity solution is written as a perturbation expansion:

$$\vec{u} = \vec{u}_0 + \epsilon \vec{u}_1 = (u_0, v_0, w_0) + \epsilon(u_1, v_1, w_1) \tag{7.88}$$

which is inserted into the Stokes, continuity, and various boundary equations.

The only difference is of course the slip condition. To first order in ϵ:

$$u_0 + \epsilon u_1 = \epsilon P \hat{b} \frac{\partial u_0}{\partial z}|_{z=0} \tag{7.89}$$

7.2.1 Zeroth Order

By construction, setting $\epsilon = 0$ gives classic Couette flow:

$$u_0(x, y, P) = u_P \tag{7.90}$$

$$u_0(x, y, 0) = 0 \tag{7.91}$$

whose solution is a linear interpolation between the top and no-slip boundary conditions:

$$u_0(x, y, z) = \frac{u_P}{P} z \tag{7.92}$$

7.2.2 First Order

Cancelling the zeroth order terms and dividing by ϵ gives the first order slip condition:

$$u_1 = P\hat{b}\frac{\partial u_0}{\partial z}|_{z=0} = P\hat{b}\frac{u_P}{P} \tag{7.93}$$

$$u_1 = \hat{b}u_P \tag{7.94}$$

Again, the zeroth order solution enters the slip condition.

The analysis proceeds exactly as before, until the point where we solve for the coefficient B_0.

Use Slip Boundary Condition to find B_0

We have found that the Fourier coefficient for $\vec{k} = (0, 0)$ is $U_0 = B_0(z-P)$. We may equate this with the formal definition:

$$U_0 = B_0(z - P) = \frac{1}{L^2}\int_0^L \int_0^L u_1(x, y, z)\, dxdy \tag{7.95}$$

If we evaluate this at $z = 0$, we may substitute the first order slip condition:

$$-B_0 P = \frac{1}{L^2}\int_0^L \int_0^L \hat{b}u_P\, dxdy \tag{7.96}$$

The double integral is the area-weighted average:

$$B_0 = -\frac{u_P}{P}\frac{1}{L^2}\int_0^L \int_0^L \hat{b}\, dxdy = -\frac{u_P}{P}\left\langle \hat{b} \right\rangle \tag{7.97}$$

So the **first order velocity term** is:

$$u_1(x,y,z) = \frac{u_P}{P}\left\langle \hat{b} \right\rangle (P-z) + \sum_{k\neq 0}\left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz}\right)\exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) \tag{7.98}$$

7.2.3 Bolt Together Velocity Solution

We now have all the parts of the x velocity perturbaton expansion $u(x,y,z) = u_0(x,y,z) + \epsilon u_1(x,y,z)$. Bolting it together gives:

$$u(x,y,z) = \frac{u_P}{P}z + \epsilon\frac{u_P}{P}\left\langle \hat{b} \right\rangle (P-z) + \epsilon\sum_{k\neq 0}\left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz}\right)\exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) \tag{7.99}$$

Recall that:

$$\epsilon = \frac{b_{\max}}{P} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \hat{b} = \frac{b}{b_{\max}} \tag{7.100}$$

therefore:

$$\epsilon\frac{u_P}{P}\left\langle \hat{b} \right\rangle = \frac{b_{\max}}{P}\frac{u_P}{P}\left\langle \frac{b}{b_{\max}} \right\rangle = \frac{u_P}{P^2}\langle b \rangle \tag{7.101}$$

so that:

$$\epsilon\frac{u_P}{P}\left\langle \hat{b} \right\rangle (P-z) = \frac{u_P}{P}\langle b \rangle - \frac{u_P}{P^2}\langle b \rangle z \tag{7.102}$$

Thus, the final velocity solution is:

$$u(x,y,z) = \frac{u_P}{P}\left[z\left(1 - \frac{\langle b \rangle}{P}\right) + \langle b \rangle\right] + \epsilon\sum_{k\neq 0}\left(A_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz}\right)\exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) \tag{7.103}$$

7.2.4 Effective Slip Length

As before, we calculate the effective slip length with the velocity gradient:

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial z}u(x,y,z) = \frac{u_P}{P}\left(1 - \frac{\langle b \rangle}{P}\right) - \epsilon\sum_{k\neq 0}\left(kA_{\vec{k}} e^{-kz}\right)\exp(i\vec{k}\cdot\vec{r}) \tag{7.104}$$

At $z = P$, the term $e^{-kz} < \exp(-2\pi P/L)$ and is negligible since $P \gg L$. So:

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial z}u(x,y,z) = \frac{u_P}{P}\left(1 - \frac{\langle b\rangle}{P}\right) \tag{7.105}$$

Rearranging to the form of Navier slip:

$$u_P = P\left(1 - \frac{\langle b\rangle}{P}\right)^{-1}\frac{\partial u}{\partial z}|_{z=0} \tag{7.106}$$

Implying an effective slip length at the top boundary of:

$$b_{\text{eff}}(P) = P\left(1 - \frac{\langle b\rangle}{P}\right)^{-1} = \frac{P}{1 - \frac{\langle b\rangle}{P}} \tag{7.107}$$

The slip length of the surface is found by subtracting P from this:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{P}{1 - \frac{\langle b\rangle}{P}} - P \tag{7.108}$$

$$= \frac{P - P\left[1 - \frac{\langle b\rangle}{P}\right]}{1 - \frac{\langle b\rangle}{P}} = \frac{P - P + \langle b\rangle}{1 - \frac{\langle b\rangle}{P}} = \frac{\langle b\rangle}{1 - \frac{\langle b\rangle}{P}} \tag{7.109}$$

We have assumed that for Couette-like flow, $b_{\max} \ll P$. Clearly $\langle b\rangle < b_{\max}$, therefore $\langle b\rangle \ll P$, and so $\langle b\rangle / P$ is negligible. We are left with:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b\rangle \tag{7.110}$$

(Note that for this Couette-like flow, the effective slip length 'seen' at the driving plate, $b_{\text{eff}}(P)$, is negligibly different from P, as expected.)

Equation (7.110) and its perturbative derivation was published in 2008 [35].

7.3 Conclusion

The effective slip length found by perturbing plug flow reconciles with the effective slip length found by homogenization. Our perturbation analysis assumed a strict definition of plug-like flow: $P \ll b_{\min}$, and further assumed that near the driving plate, the perturbations had diffused into laminar flow, expressed by $L \ll P$. In summary, the regime satisfied:

$$L \ll P \ll b_{\min} \tag{7.111}$$

Based on this perturbation analysis, a physical regime that is *close to* plug flow will have a measured effective slip length that is well approximated by the harmonic mean formula of Equation (7.80):

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{7.112}$$

A system is certainly close to plug flow if $P \ll b_{\min}$. However, flow may be sufficiently plug-like if the slip velocities are *of the same order* as the driving velocity. This would imply that $P \sim b_{\min}$. Thus, the perturbation analysis suggests that the harmonic mean formula of Equation (7.80) applies if:

$$L \ll P \sim b_{\min} \tag{7.113}$$

This is confirmed in the numerical testing described in Chapter 8; we further discover that Equation (7.80) works quite well as an approximation even when slip lengths are of the same order as the period:

$$L \sim b \ll P \tag{7.114}$$

The perturbative approach can also be applied to the limit of vanishing slip length. If $b_{\max}$ is smaller than other length scales of the flow, then the effective slip length is best approximated by the simple area-weighted average of Equation (7.110).

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle \tag{7.115}$$

This is confirmed by numerical simulations, as described in Chapter 8.

Chapter 8

Numerical Testing

We have derived two analytic formulae for the effective slip length of a mixed slip surface, using two different mathematical techniques. The homogenized effective slip length is exact in the limit of vanishing period, and is expected to be a useful approximation if a physical system is 'near the limit'. A way to quantify 'nearness to the limit' is to compare the magnitudes of the relevant length scales of the system: the period L of the surface patterning, and the domain height P. Thus, a physical system is near the limit if:

$$L \ll P \tag{8.1}$$

Our perturbative effective slip lengths were also derived with the assumption that $L \ll P$; furthermore, the $b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle$ expression is expected to be a good approximation when $b \ll L$.

We wish to test our predictions against the 'true' slip lengths of physical systems as they get closer and closer to the relevant limits. Ideally, one would measure effective slip lengths in physical experiments. Such experiments are beyond the scope of this thesis. However, the next best thing are numerical simulations carried out by a computer. Therefore, in this chapter we compare our predicted b_{eff} expressions with effective slip lengths derived from numerical simulations.

8.1 Finite Element Modelling

Perhaps the most powerful and versatile numerical method for solving partial differential equations is Finite Element Modelling (FEM). Many industrial-strength implementations are available; we chose the free and open-source package **FreeFem++**, available from `www.freefem.org` [21].

The input to FEM software is a precise description of the model, including the size and shape of the domain, and the equations that hold on the domain and its boundaries. The output of an FEM simulation is a velocity field on the domain.

In our FEM simulations, we used a model with Laplace's equation holding on a rectangular domain of height P, with a fixed shear rate $\dot{\gamma}$ at the top of the domain, periodic boundary conditions on the sides of the domain, and the full tensor slip boundary condition at the bottom of the domain. See Figure (8.1).

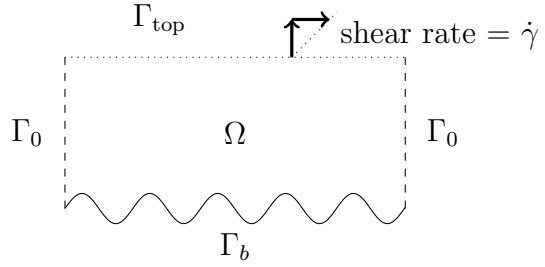


Figure 8.1: Domain Ω with rough slip boundary Γ_b, top boundary Γ_{top} and periodic side boundaries Γ_0.

For convenience when working with slip boundary conditions, in this thesis we adopted the convention that the unit normal vector $\vec{n}$ on the surface points 'up' into the fluid, that is, *into* the domain. (An increase in x velocity with increasing z gives a positive velocity gradient $\partial u/\partial z$. On a flat surface, the convention of the inward-pointing $\vec{n}$ ensures that the velocity gradient in the direction of $\vec{n}$, $\partial u/\partial n$, has the same sign (and magnitude) as $\partial u/\partial n$.) A consequence is that the normal vector $\vec{n}$ on the top boundary points *down.*

The flow is shear-driven only. The top fixed-shear boundary condition can be expressed in terms of the deformation rate tensor:

$$2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) \cdot \vec{n} = (-\dot{\gamma}, 0) \tag{8.2}$$

(The negative sign is due to the downward-pointing $\vec{n}$ on the top boundary.)

Then the derivation of Section 6.2.3 (page 126) can be augmented with the top shear boundary condition to get:

$$\int_{\Gamma_b} \frac{1}{b}\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} + \int_{\Gamma_{\text{top}}} (-\dot{\gamma}, 0) \cdot \vec{g} = 2\int_{\Omega} \mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) + \frac{1}{\mu}\int_{\Omega} \nabla p \cdot \vec{g} \tag{8.3}$$

However, the flow is shear-driven only, with no pressure drop across the domain, so the integral containing the pressure gradient vanishes, leaving:

$$\int_{\Gamma_b} \frac{1}{b}\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} - \int_{\Gamma_{\text{top}}} (\dot{\gamma}, 0) \cdot \vec{g} = 2\int_{\Omega} \mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) \tag{8.4}$$

Note that the viscosity has vanished due to the periodicity of the pressure.

While our convention of an inward-pointing normal vector $\vec{n}$ was appropriate for studying slip, an *outward-pointing* unit normal is the more common convention in mathematics, including in finite element modelling. To use the formula of Equation (8.4) in Freefem++, we must change to the outward-pointing convention. This alters the boundary conditions by a negative sign to $2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) \cdot \vec{n} = -\frac{1}{b}\vec{u}$ and $2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) \cdot \vec{n} = (\dot{\gamma}, 0)$, which amounts to multiplying b and $\dot{\gamma}$ by -1 in Equation (8.4). Thus, the variational formula used for the Freefem++ simulations was:

$$2\int_{\Omega} \mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) - \int_{\Gamma_{\text{top}}} (\dot{\gamma}, 0) \cdot \vec{g} + \int_{\Gamma_b} \frac{1}{b}\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} = 0 \tag{8.5}$$

The shear rate $\dot{\gamma}$ was set to one. The only other parameter is the slip length b, which in simulations was expressed as a fraction of the domain height P or period L.

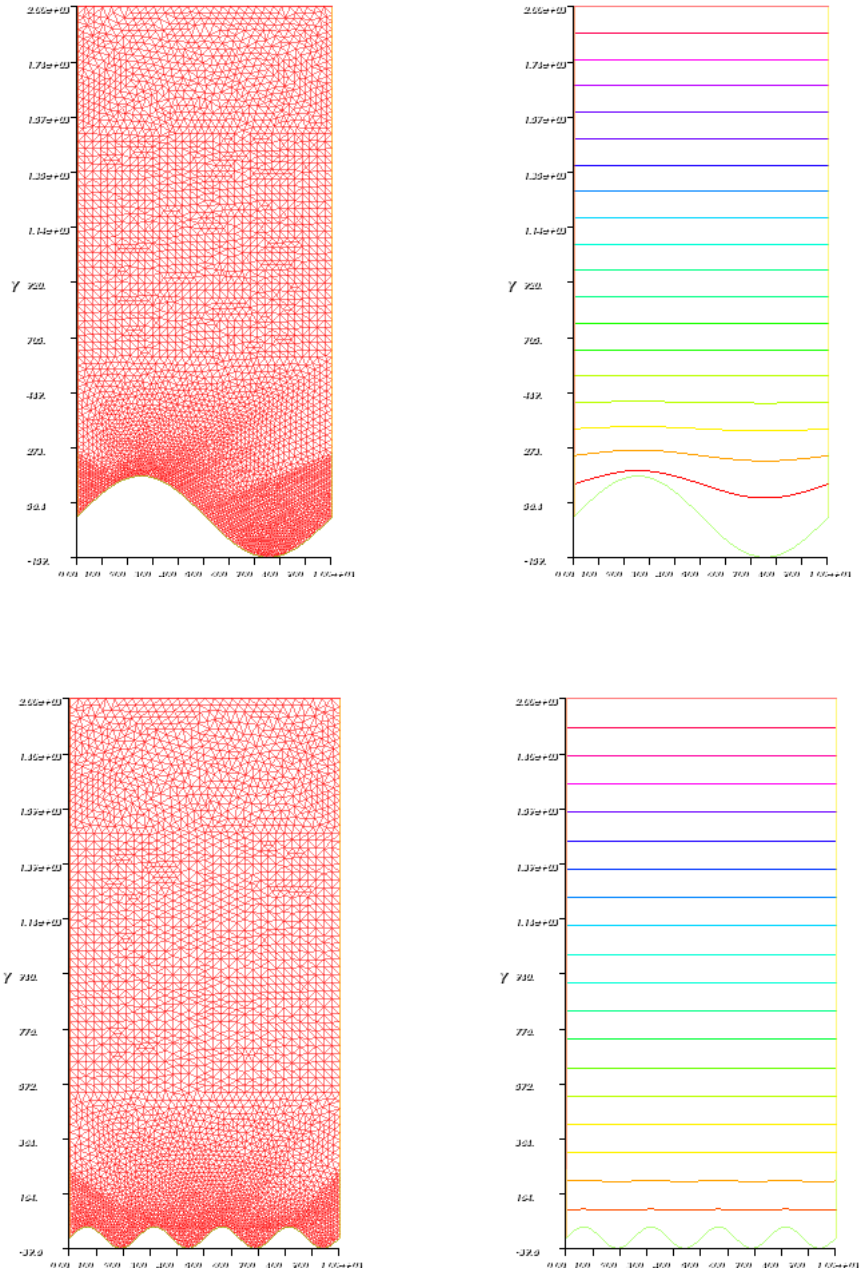


Figure 8.2: The mesh (left) and velocity streamline plot (right) for FEM simulations on a domain with a rough slip surface with one period (top) and four periods (bottom).

Several simulations were done, with different period lengths, on both sinusoidal and flat slip boundaries. An FEM simulation has a mesh defined on the domain, specifying the points at which a velocity solution is found. An adaptive mesh was used, so that each full sine cycle always had at least six mesh points on it, even for very short period lengths.

The mesh and corresponding velocity streamline plot for a couple of simulations are shown in Figure (8.2). Notably, within a period length or two of the sinusoidal surface, the velocity has become uniform horizontal flow.

The top of the domain, at height P above the slip surface, is known as the far field. The velocity and shear rate in the far field, together with the height, define an effective slip length, as described in Chapter 1. We shall denote this FEM far-field effective slip length as b_{far}. In **all of our simulations**, the far-field velocity turned out to be constant and in the x direction only, even when the period was as large $\frac{1}{2}$ of the domain height. Therefore, b_{far} was always a well-defined single value.

8.1.1 Flat Surface

We start with the simplest case of a flat surface, with a binary slip patterning consisting of alternating stripes of high slip ($b_{\max}$) and low slip ($b_{\min}$) material. The stripes are of equal width; two stripe widths equal the period L.

Harmonic Mean Formula

The homogenization analysis yielded $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}/b \right\rangle^{-1}$, which is expected to be a good approximation in the limit $L \ll P, b$. The perturbation analysis yielded $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ – the same formula simplified for flat surfaces. Therefore, we set $b_{\max} = P$ and $b_{\min} = \frac{1}{5}P$, and ran a series of FEM simulations for different values of L, starting with $L = \frac{1}{2}P$, going down to $L = \frac{1}{320}P$. The far-field FEM effective slip length b_{far} was calculated for each simulation. The results are plotted in Figure (8.3).

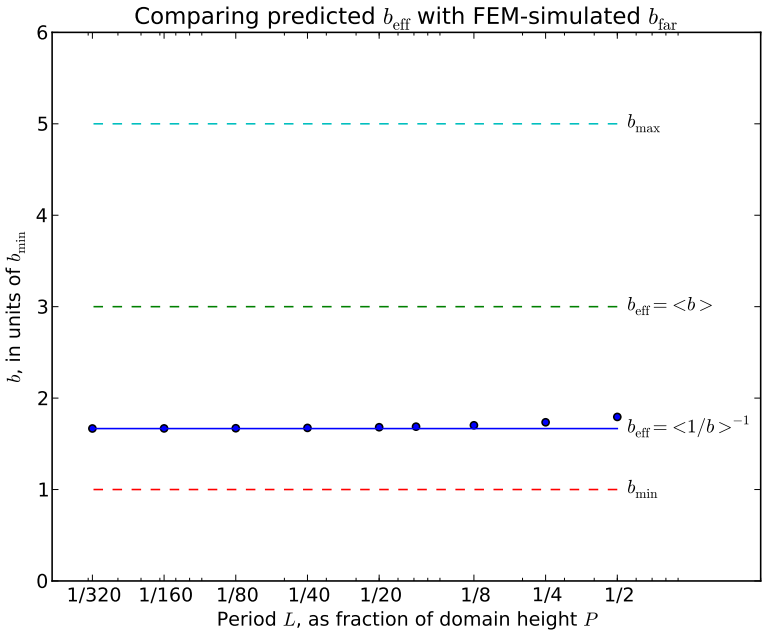


Figure 8.3: Comparison of numerical b_{far} values with predicted b_{eff} for different period sizes, with $b \sim P$. The dots are values of b_{far}. The solid line is the $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ prediction.

As Figure (8.3) shows, if $b \sim P$, the harmonic mean $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ formula is an excellent approximation of b_{far} if $L \ll P$, and still a good approximation even if $L \sim P$. Thus, at least in this numerical simulation, the requirement $L \ll P$ is in practice met by the condition $L \leq \frac{1}{10}P$.

Simple Mean Formula

The perturbation analysis also yielded a formula $b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle$ in the limit of vanishing slip length. This simple area-weighted mean was derived assuming $L \ll P$, and is expected to be a good approximation to b_{far} in the limit $b \ll L \ll P$. To explore this, we ran a series of FEM simulations with fixed $L = \frac{1}{10}P$, and $b_{\max}$ varying from $b_{\max} = P$ down to $b_{\max} = \frac{1}{400}P$. The b_{far} of each simulation is plotted as a dot in Figure (8.4).

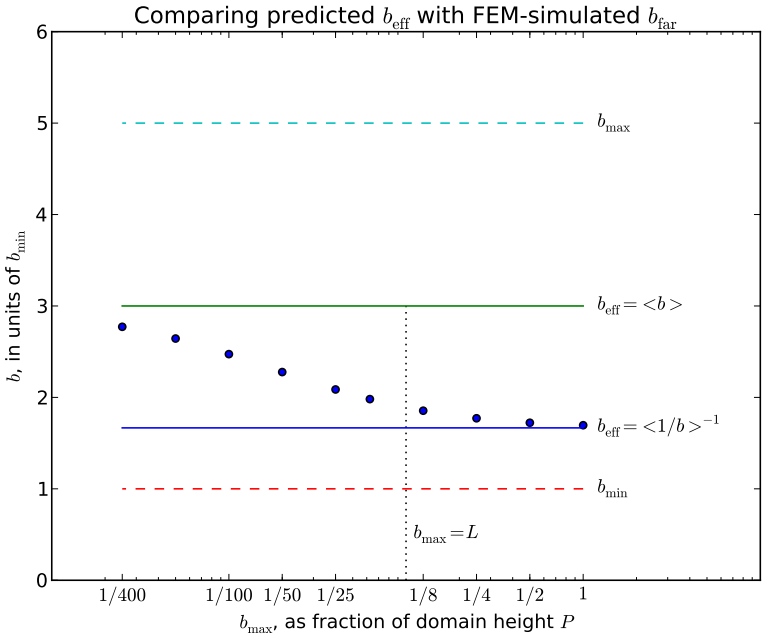


Figure 8.4: Comparison of numerical b_{far} values with b_{eff} predictions, for different values of $b_{\max}$, with $L = \frac{1}{10}P$. The dots are values of b_{far}. The lower solid line is the $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ prediction, and the upper solid line is $b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle$ prediction. The vertical dotted line indicates where $b_{\max} = L$.

The values of b_{far} in Figure (8.4) demonstrate a gradual transition from the regime where $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ applies to the regime where $b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle$ applies. Figure (8.4) affirms that $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ is an excellent approximation in the regime $L \ll b, P$, and reveals that $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ is a surprisingly good ap-

proximation in the regime $L \sim b \ll P$. The 'limit of vanishing slip length' is shown to be quite a strong condition: The regime $b \approx \frac{1}{10}L \ll P$ is a 'transition regime', with the b_{far} values midway between the simple mean and the harmonic mean; the simple mean is not a good approximation until $b_{\max} \leq \frac{1}{40}L$.

8.1.2 Rough Surface

The FEM testing on a flat surface showed our harmonic mean $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ formula to be an excellent approximation in the regime $L \ll P, b_{\max}$. We now wish to investigate the importance of the arc-length correction – the correction due to the increased area of liquid-solid contact on a rough surface.

To that end, we ran a series of FEM simulations with sinusoidal surfaces. Each surface was a corrugation with the standard sine-wave profile – the amplitude and period are always in the ratio $1 : 2\pi$. The slip length varied in a binary fashion, with high slip in the valleys of the sinusoid, and low slip on the peaks of the sinusoid. This models a nanograting with air pockets in the grooves. The flow was shear-driven by a fixed shear rate, and the slip lengths were fixed at $b_{\min} = \frac{1}{5}P$, $b_{\max} = P$. A schematic appears in Figure (8.5).

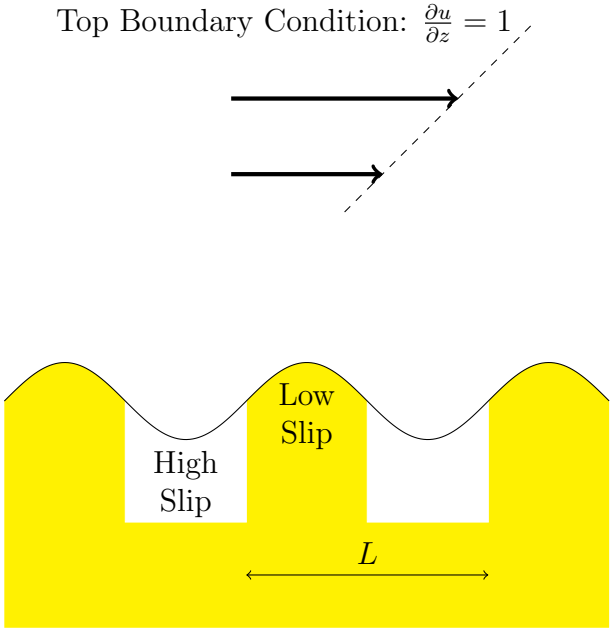


Figure 8.5: Schematic of the FEM model with corrugated mixed-slip surface.

A series of FEM simulations were done with different periods of the sinusoidal corrugation, starting from $L = \frac{1}{2}P$, down to $L = \frac{1}{200}P$. The b_{far} from

each simulation appears as a dot in the plot of Figure (8.6).

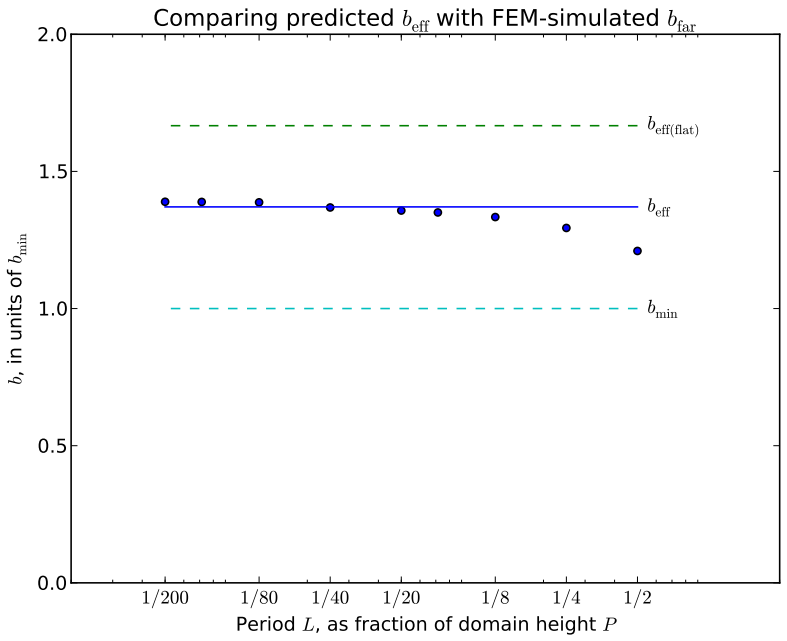


Figure 8.6: Comparison of numerical b_{far} values with b_{eff} predictions for **sinusoidal** surfaces for different periods, with $b \sim P$. The dots are values of b_{far}. The solid line is the $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}/b \right\rangle^{-1}$ prediction. The upper dashed line is the $b_{\text{eff(flat)}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ predicted if the surface were assumed to be flat.

Figure (8.6) clearly shows the significance of the arc length correction: The full $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}/b \right\rangle^{-1}$ expression with arc length correction is shown as the solid line, and the b_{far} values converge on this line as L gets smaller. The $b_{\text{eff(flat)}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ calculated if the surface were assumed to be flat is shown as the upper dotted line. Thus, if $b \sim P$, then the full b_{eff} prediction is an excellent approximation when $L \ll P$.

To better test the accuracy of the b_{eff} prediction, we calculated the differences between the b_{far} values and b_{eff}, expressed as a percentage of b_{eff}. The resulting percentage differences are plotted in Figure (8.7).

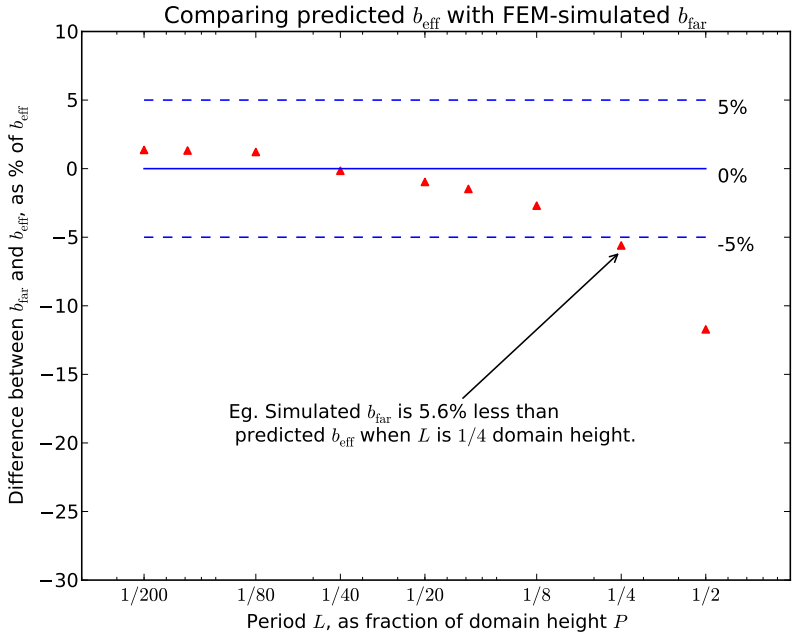


Figure 8.7: Percentage comparisons between numerical b_{far} values and contact-area-corrected $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}/b \right\rangle^{-1}$ predictions. The dots are values of b_{far}, expressed as the percentage $(b_{\text{far}} - b_{\text{eff}})/b_{\text{eff}} \times 100$.

The percentage differences of Figure (8.7) reveal that our contact-area-corrected $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}/b \right\rangle^{-1}$ prediction for rough surfaces is accurate to within a few % when $L \ll P, b_{\text{max}}$. For example: Accurate to within 5% when $L \leq \frac{1}{5}P$, and within 1% when L is less than 5% of P.

The slip lengths in these FEM simulations were calculated with respect to the $z = 0$ line, about which the sinusoids oscillate. In Chapter 3 we noted the ambiguity in the definition of slip length – does the surface begin at the $z = 0$ line or at the tops of the sine wave peaks? To investigate this issue, we recalculated the measured slip lengths with respect to the **tops of the peaks**. These are plotted as the crosses in Figure (8.8) (along with the 'uncorrected' slip lengths).

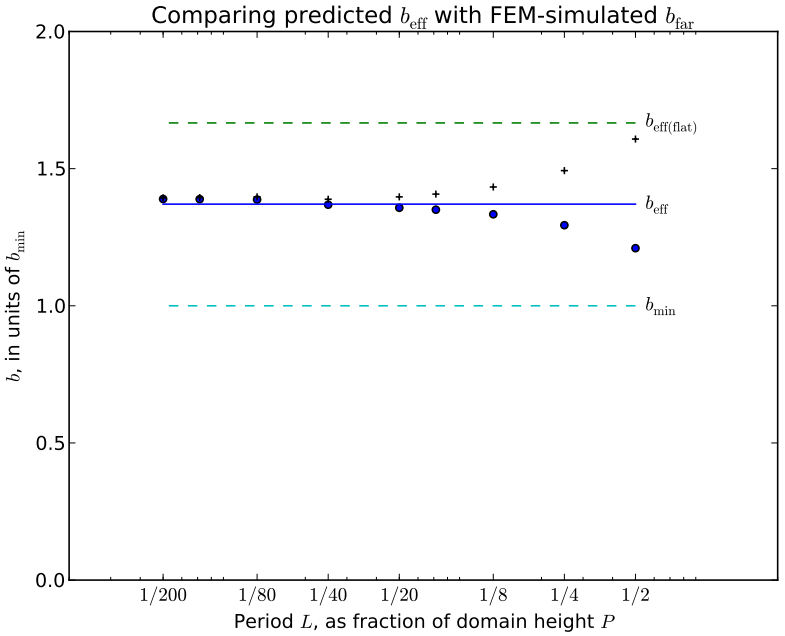


Figure 8.8: Comparison of numerical b_{far} values with b_{eff} predictions for **sinusoidal** surfaces for different periods, with $b \sim P$. The dots are values of b_{far} calculated w.r.t. the $z = 0$ line, and the crosses are b_{far} values calculated w.r.t. the top of the sinusoid. The solid line is the $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}/b \right\rangle^{-1}$ prediction. The upper dashed line is the $b_{\text{eff(flat)}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ predicted if the surface were assumed to be flat.

Figure (8.8) shows that the slip lengths defined with respect to the tops of the surface peaks differ from the predicted b_{eff} by about the same amount as the $z = 0$ based slip lengths – but in the other direction. In other words, for a given period L, the predicted b_{eff} value lies between the two numerical b_{far} values calculated with respect to the two different reference points. The difference between the two types of b_{far} values increases as L increases, because the roughness amplitude increases in concert. The accuracy of b_{eff} depends on how the measured b_{far} values are calculated, and the 'correct' way to calculate b_{far} depends on the circumstance. If effective slip lengths are measured with respect to the tops of the roughness, then our b_{eff} predic-

tions will underestimate measured effective slip lengths.

A final note about numerical issues: A close look look at the data plotted in Figure (8.7) reveals that the numerics and the prediction agree better and better as L gets smaller and smaller — up to a point. Then the prediction *underestimates* the numerical values. We believe this to be a computational artefact, due to an insufficient number of lattice points on a very rapidly oscillating boundary: When we noticed that the b_{far} values overshot the prediction, we ran the same simulations with double the number of lattice points. The overshoot reduced, so we further increased the number of lattice points, which gave even better results. At some point we hit the limit of our computational power, but it is reasonable to think that given sufficient computational power, the discrepancy would disappear.

8.2 Finite Difference Numerics

As an exercise, the same slip problem was also solved numerically using the finite difference method. The main benefit of this exercise (apart from educational) was that the software employed allowed the easy visualisation of 3-dimensional flow fields. We employed Python using the Numpy library, which is a front end to various very fast C and Fortran libraries, and the Mayavi library for visualisation. A curved boundary is difficult to implement in this approach, so the case of the flat slip boundary was studied.

Three-dimensional velocity profiles were generated. The x-velocity u for flow over a mixed-slip surface is shown in Figure (8.9).

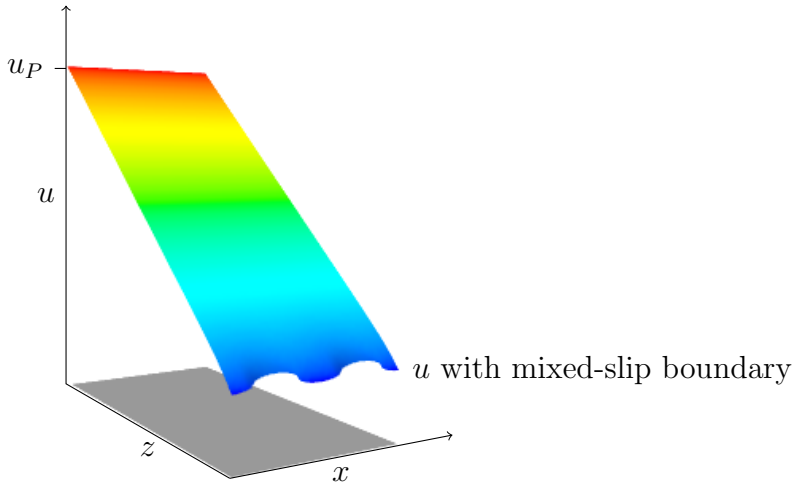


Figure 8.9: The coloured surface is u, the x-velocity component of a velocity field of a finite difference simulation of flow over a flat mixed-slip surface.

The x-velocity is high and uniform at the top boundary condition (large z), and varies periodically over the slip boundary.

To provide some perspective, flow profiles over *pure* high-slip and low-slip surfaces were generated. These are plotted together, along with the mixed-slip flow profile, in Figure (8.10).

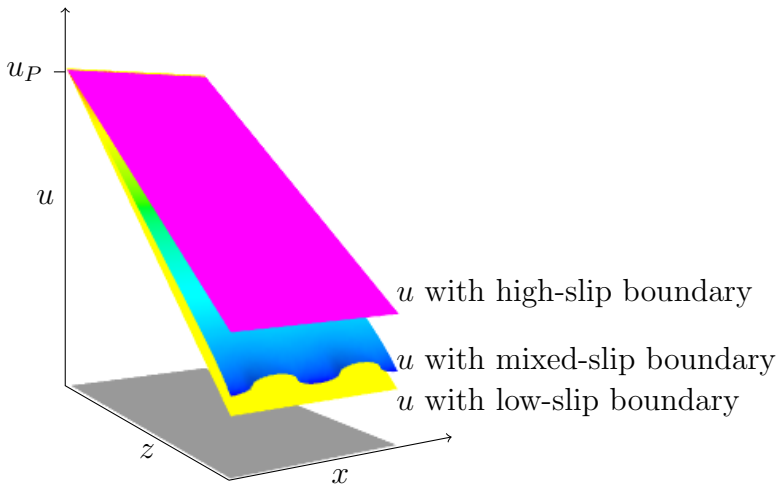


Figure 8.10: The same mixed-slip flow field as in Figure (8.9), plus the flow solutions for flow over the purely high-slip surface (pink), and the purely low-slip surface (yellow).

There is an interesting feature in the mixed-slip flow field: while the velocity at the slip boundary varies periodically, the variation is not very large. The slip velocity does *not* swing between the extremes of velocities over the pure high-slip and low-slip surfaces. Instead, the slip velocity has only a moderate periodic variation about a central value.

What is that central value? Of course, we expect it to be the slip velocity that would occur if the surface had a single slip length equal to our predicted b_{eff}. We explore this by generating a last flow profile with a pure b_{eff} slip length surface. We plot this (in black) together with the mixed-slip flow profile in Figure (8.11).

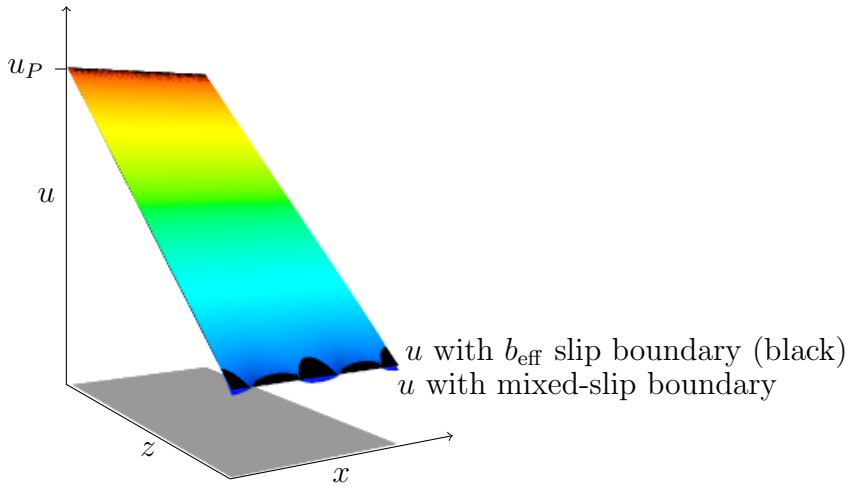


Figure 8.11: The same mixed-slip flow field as in Figure (8.9), plus the flow field corresponding to a homogeneous boundary of slip length b_{eff} (black).

Figure (8.11) shows excellent agreement between the effective flow profile and the mixed-slip profile. For most of the domain, they are almost indistinguishable. Only very close to the slip boundary does the mixed-slip profile exhibit a periodic variation about the effective slip profile.

The plot of Figure (8.11) also throws light on another issue: how thick is the boundary layer? The boundary layer can be arbitrarily defined to end where the flow becomes (arbitrarily close to) uniform. Without being quantitative, we can see that a reasonable choice for boundary layer thickness d could be less than the period L.

8.3 Conclusion

Numerical simulations reveal that if the period of surface patterning L is much less than the domain height P and typical slip lengths, then the effective slip length as defined in the far field of the system is very well approximated by:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{8.6}$$

The b_{eff} expression incorporates a correction for the increased area of solid-liquid contact in rough surfaces. Numerical testing shows this correction to be accurate, so therefore our b_{eff} expression of Equation (8.6) is valid for both flat and rough surfaces.

Numerical simulations further reveal that if $L \ll P$ and slip lengths are of the same order as the period, $L \sim b$, then Equation (8.6) is a surprisingly good approximation for effective slip lengths.

If slip lengths are much smaller than any other length scale, then the effective slip length is best approximated by a simple area-weighted mean. Numerical testing with a flat surface showed that if $b_{\max} \leq \frac{1}{40} \ll P$, then the effective slip length is well approximated by:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle \tag{8.7}$$

Chapter 9

Analogues of Effective Slip

We have found the effective slip length for Stokes flow over a periodic mixed-slip surface. However, on a purely mathematical level we have shown that if Laplace's equation holds on a domain, and a particular boundary condition holds on a boundary:

$$\nabla^2 u = f \tag{9.1}$$

$$u = b(x, y)\frac{\partial u}{\partial z} \tag{9.2}$$

where b is some periodic function on the boundary with units of length and period L, then there exists an effective boundary parameter b_{eff} that is a good approximation in the appropriate limits:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \text{ if } L \ll b, \qquad \text{and} \qquad b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle \text{ if } b \ll L \tag{9.3}$$

This models our slip problem. It is also interesting to ask what other physical systems these results might apply to. If we can find appropriate systems, then we automatically have an effective boundary parameter — some analogue of effective slip length.

We shall investigate two such physical systems forthwith: a thermal insulation problem and a heterogeneous catalyst problem.

9.1 Thermal Insulation

Consider an atypical New Zealand house: one with insulation in the roof. A standard house has an angled roof situated above a flat ceiling, with a fairly large crawlspace in between. The ceiling panels are attached to the underside of wooden beams known as rafters, which are spaced 600 mm apart. It is traditional to devote several entire weekends to laying insulating material on top of the ceiling panels, in the gaps between the rafters. Thus, above the warm living space of a house, is a heterogeneous insulator, comprising wood (the rafters), highly insulating material, and those air gaps that are left over because you couldn't be bothered cutting scratchy, unwieldy fibreglass batts to exactly the right size. A schematic is presented in Figure (9.1).

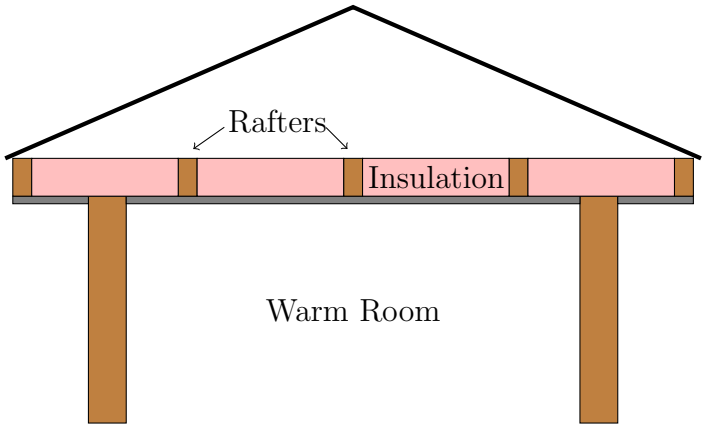


Figure 9.1: Schematic of ceiling insulation in a house.

9.1.1 Mathematical Model

We are interested in the 'net' insulating properties of the heterogeneous insulator comprising wood, insulating material and possibly air gaps. To that end, we model the heterogeneous insulator as a bulk material with: a warm room at the lower boundary, and convection-dominated heat loss on the top boundary. For consistency with our slip model, we shall invert the vertical dimension, and let $z = 0$ denote the top of the bulk and $z = P$ the bottom

of the bulk. The temperature field is $T(x, y, z)$, with boundary conditions at $T(x, y, 0)$ and $T(x, y, P)$, denoted $T(0)$ and $T(P)$. See Figure (9.2).

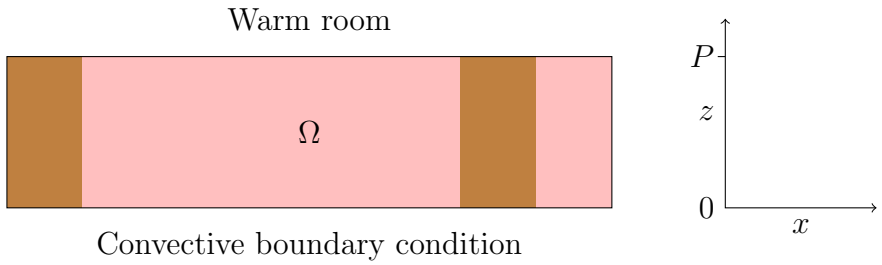


Figure 9.2: The domain Ω is the wooden rafters plus any insulating material. For consistency with the slip model, the domain is 'upside down'.

Dirichlet Condition

The warm room can be considered to be held at a constant temperature, due to the interventions of its human occupants. Therefore, on the $z = P$ boundary is the Dirichlet condition

$$T(P) = T_{\text{room}} = \text{constant} \tag{9.4}$$

Bulk Condition

The distribution of temperature T in a material is governed by the heat equation:

$$\frac{\partial T}{\partial t} = \frac{k}{\rho C_p} \nabla^2 T \tag{9.5}$$

where k is the thermal conductivity, and C_p is the specific heat capacity.

We shall assume that the system is steady-state, so that the time dependent term vanishes. Hence, the solid material – wooden rafters and insulating material – is governed simply by Laplace's equation:

$$\nabla^2 T = 0 \tag{9.6}$$

Conductive Heat Current

Consider a bar of test material of cross-sectional area A clamped between a hot reservoir and a cold reservoir, as shown in Figure (9.3).

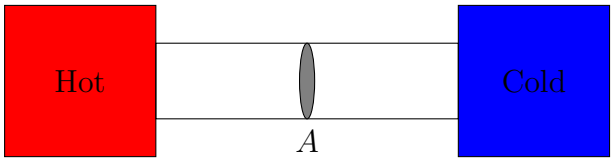


Figure 9.3: Bar of material of cross-section A between hot and cold reservoirs.

The heat current in the bar (Joules per second) depends on the temperature gradient, the thermal conductivity k and the area A:

$$\frac{dQ}{dt} = kA\frac{\partial T}{\partial x} \tag{9.7}$$

Convective Heat Current

Convection is harder to quantify than conduction. A plate at temperature T convecting into an infinite reservoir of gas at temperature T_0 shows a heat flux approximately proportional to $(T - T_0)^{5/4}$. However, consider the experimental setup in the diagram of Figure (9.4): a body of convecting air between a hot body and a cold body.

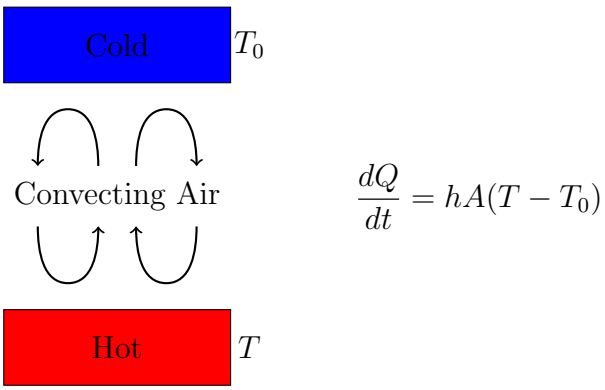


Figure 9.4: Convection between hot and cold reservoirs of surface area A.

For such a system, the heat flux is usually considered to have a simple

linear relationship to temperature difference:

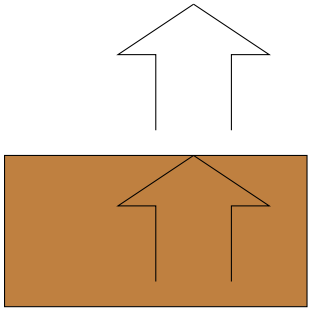
$$\frac{dQ}{dt} = hA(T - T_0) \tag{9.8}$$

This is known as Newton's law of cooling. h is the *heat transfer coefficient* of the system, and depends on the fluid and the physical situation.

Convective Boundary Condition

The highly-conductive steel roof of a house can be presumed to be at the same low temperature T_0 as the outside air. We assume that radiative heat transfer is negligible, and that the only heat transfer is due to convection occurring between the bulk heterogeneous insulator and the cold roof.

The heat flux *leaving* the boundary is given approximately by Newton's law of cooling. Furthermore, heat flux will arrive *at* the boundary in accordance with the heat conduction equation. See Figure (9.5).



Flux from boundary: $\frac{dQ}{dt} = hA(T - T_0)$

Flux to boundary: $\frac{dQ}{dt} = kA\frac{\partial T}{\partial z}$

Figure 9.5: Heat fluxes conducted *to* boundary and convected *from* boundary.

Since the boundary is a virtual plane with no heat capacity, the fluxes are always equal:

$$hA(T - T_0) = kA\frac{\partial T}{\partial z} \tag{9.9}$$

For convenience, define a new variable $\tau = T - T_0$. Then the convective boundary condition is:

$$\tau = \frac{k}{h}\frac{\partial \tau}{\partial z} \tag{9.10}$$

The heat transfer coefficient h is constant for a given system. But the thermal conductivity k varies spatiallly because the insulation layer is heterogenous. Define:

$$b(x, y) = \frac{k}{h} \tag{9.11}$$

Then $b(x, y)$ is periodic function on the boundary and has dimensions of length.

We now have a system of equations similar to those describing Stokes flow with Navier slip:

$$\nabla^2 \tau = 0 \tag{9.12}$$

$$\tau = b\frac{\partial \tau}{\partial z} \tag{9.13}$$

Note that while the boundary condition is heterogeneous – $b(x, y)$ is a function of position on the boundary plane – this is due to the fact that *bulk* is heterogeneous. The coupling occurs because the heat fluxes match at the boundary.

The function $b(x, y)$ has units of length, and we can now solve to find an effective 'insulation length' for the heterogeneous insulation. We assume that all heat in the room is ultimately lost by convection above the insulator. Since the convective heat flux depends on the temperature on the convective boundary, to minimize heat loss for a given room temperature, we want the lowest temperature on the convective boundary. This in turn demands the lowest effective insulation length. See Figure (9.6).

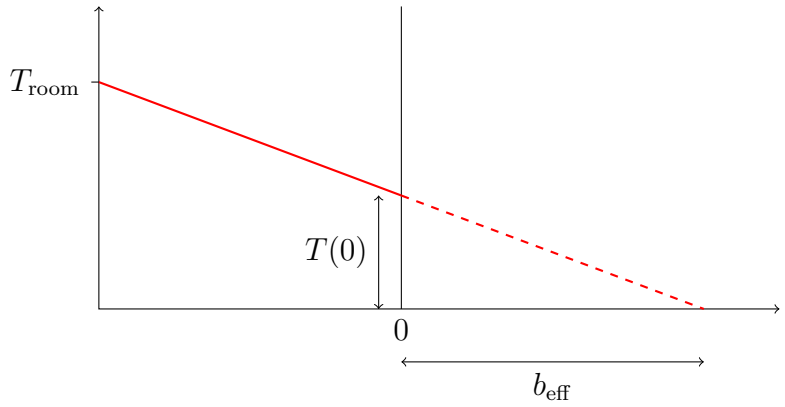


Figure 9.6: Minimizing heat loss requires minimal $T(0)$, which implies minimal 'insulation length' b_{eff}.

9.1.2 Ready-Made Solution

To apply one of the two formulae we have already found, we need to know which regime the system is in. We first use empirical data on typical insulating materials to estimate a range for b.

The heat transfer coefficient for air is experimentally determined to be in the range 10 - 100 $\text{Wm}^{-2}\text{K}^{-1}$. The thermal conductivity for wood depends on the moisture content: from 0.04 - 0-.12 $\text{Wm}^{-1}\text{K}^{-1}$ for oven-dry wood, and up to 0.4 $\text{Wm}^{-1}\text{K}^{-1}$ for wood with more than 12% water content. Typical highly-insulating materials might be polystyrene foam or polyurethane foam, with $k = 0.03$ $\text{Wm}^{-1}\text{K}^{-1}$, or mineral wool, sheep's wool, or fibreglass wool, at $k = 0.04$ $\text{Wm}^{-1}\text{K}^{-1}$. Air itself – if sufficiently constrained to avoid convection – has a very low thermal conductivity of $k = 0.024$ $\text{Wm}^{-1}\text{K}^{-1}$.

Thus values of $b = k/h$ are in the range 0.0003 to 0.012 meters, i.e. at most about one centimeter.

This analysis of effective insulation parameter was motivated by the familiar example of ceiling insulation in a house, with domain height P being the 10 - 15 centimeter thickness of ceiling insulation, and period L being the rafter-to-rafter spacing of 60 centimeters. Then b is clearly much less than

the other length scales. However, in this example, we do not have $L \ll P$, so strictly speaking, none of our results can be assumed to be good approximations. But, for general macroscale insulation layers made up of materials like those mentioned above, if they are constructed such that $L \ll P$, then we would be in the regime $b \ll L \ll P$, and the effective insulation length would be reasonably approximated by the area-weighted average:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle \tag{9.14}$$

For 'deep' insulation layers with $L \ll P$, Equation (9.14) has serious implications. An insulator may be constructed with steel components, which has a thermal conductivity of around 40 $\text{Wm}^{-1}\text{K}^{-1}$. An air gap in the insulator may form a closed convective cell with a heat transfer coefficient of 10 - 100 $\text{Wm}^{-2}\text{K}^{-1}$; for convenience say 40 $\text{Wm}^{-2}\text{K}^{-1}$. Then a one meter tall convection cell would have the same heat current per unit area as solid steel. Thus, it is possible to have regions with a thermal conductivity 3 or more orders of magnitude higher than the best regions. If the worst regions occupy 1% of the surface area, the effective insulating length is 10 times worse than if the insulator were constructed purely of a good insulator like polystyrene. For a deep insulating layer, then, it is critical to eliminate any air gaps that are big enough to allow convection.

An interesting historical note: The first expression for effective slip is the one by J.R. Philip from 1972. His method 'generalizes a device of Karush and Young'. The 1952 paper by Karush and Young dealt with the effect of a periodic array of perfectly insulating stripes or circles, that partially block the loss of heat from a lump of radioactive material.

9.2 Catalysis

One particularly widespread application of catalysts is in the catalytic converters fitted to the exhaust systems of motorcars. Efforts are underway to improve these catalysts by the use of nanostructured material. The improvement is partly from the increased surface area, and partly from a geometric effect: the sharp corners of a catalyst nanoparticle seem to be more active than flat surfaces of the same catalyst.

Thus, it is possible that a nanostructured catalyst has a catalytic activity that varies across a nominal surface – the catalyst is heterogeneous, and may be a candidate for modelling as a homogenization problem. We shall attempt this here.

Figure (9.7) is a schematic diagram of a catalyst in action. We shall consider the simplest case of a single gas species – say N_2O_4, that diffuses to the surface of the catalyst, where a catalysed reaction breaks the molecule down into separate N_2 and O_2 molecules. The catalyst surface has some 'sharp bits' that have greater catalytic activity than the flat regions.

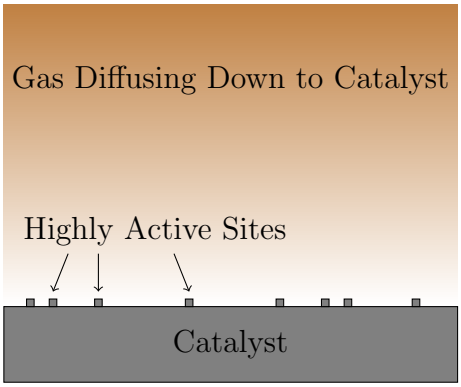


Figure 9.7: Schematic of a catalyst with surface structure.

9.2.1 Model

The concentration of the gas species (eg. N_2O_4) is C. The presence of the reaction products is presumed to not influence the behaviour of the gas species, so they are ignored.

The system is a flat (ish) plane of catalytic material, with gas flowing past parallel to the surface. The velocity of the gas is not important; the gas species of interest *diffuse* down to the surface. At some height P above the surface, the gas concentration can be considered static, constantly being replenished by uncatalysed exhaust gas. Thus the system is 'driven' by a fixed concentration C_P at the top of the domain. The size of P depends on how the catalyst is engineered; for example the catalyst could consist of hundreds of parallel pipes, each with a diameter of several millimeters. Then P would be the radius of a pipe, with a magnitude of several millimeters.

Bulk Condition: Laplace

Oxides of nitrogen comprise less than 1% of exhaust gas, so our gas species is very dilute, and so its concentration is governed by the diffusion equation. Furthermore, we shall assume steady-state conditions, so the time-dependent term vanishes, and the bulk gas obeys Laplace's equation:

$$\nabla^2 C = 0 \tag{9.15}$$

Boundary Layer

For convenience, we shall define the layer of gas adjacent to the surface as the **boundary layer.** All atoms that rain down onto the surface come from the boundary layer. There are four fluxes of molecules associated with the boundary layer: the flux of particles *into* the boundary layer from the bulk gas; the flux of particles that adsorb to the surface; the flux of particles that desorb from the surface before being catalysed; and the virtual flux of

molecules destroyed by the catalyst, that leave the boundary layer by ceasing to exist. These fluxes are illustrated in the schematic of Figure (9.8).

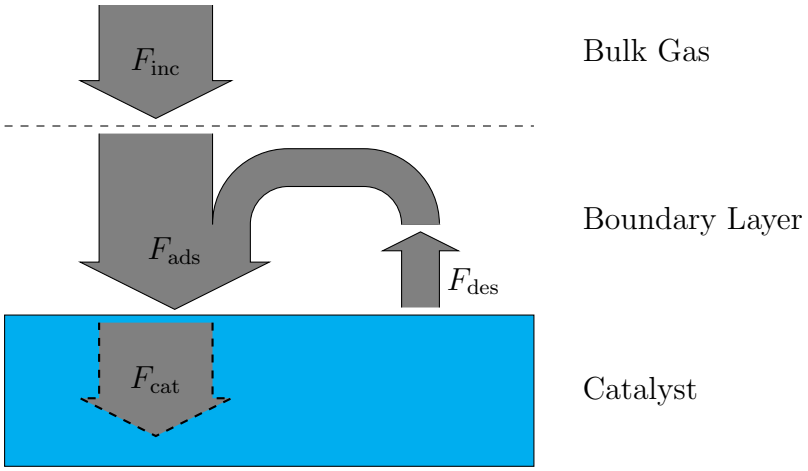


Figure 9.8: Balance of gas fluxes. In the steady-state, the net molecular flux into the boundary layer must equal the (virtual) flux of catalysed molecules leaving the boundary layer.

Mass Balance

There is a *net* flux F_{inc} of molecules per second entering the boundary layer. There is a flux F_{cat} of molecules per second permanently leaving the boundary layer by adsorbing to the surface and being catalysed out of existence. Eg. if we are concerned with the concentration C of N_2O_4, the catalysed reaction $N_2O_4 \rightarrow 2O_2 + N_2$ causes the N_2O_4 molecule to cease to exist (the N_2 and O_2 detach from the catalyst and diffuse away from the surface).

In the steady state, the concentration C in the boundary layer is constant, so by conservation of mass, the incoming flux must equal the outgoing flux:

$$F_{\text{inc}} = F_{\text{cat}} \tag{9.16}$$

As an aside, there may also be an auxiliary flux cycle: In order to be catalysed, a molecule must first adsorb to the catalyst. However, in principle,

an adsorbed molecule may *desorb* before being catalysed. Thus:

$$F_{\text{ads}} = F_{\text{cat}} + F_{\text{des}} \tag{9.17}$$

A desorbed molecule may adsorb again, or it may diffuse out of the boundary layer. Since F_{inc} is defined as a *net* incoming flux, we may not need to worry about this. In any case, for the sake of simplicity, we shall assume that desorption can be neglected.

Incoming Flux

The flux of molecules entering the boundary layer – moles per second per square meter – is given by Fick's first law of diffusion:

$$F_{\text{inc}} = D\frac{\partial C}{\partial z} \tag{9.18}$$

For an ideal gas, the diffusion coefficient D is given by $\frac{1}{3}\lambda\bar{u}$, where λ is the mean free path in the gas and $\bar{u}$ is the mean speed of gas particles. We will use this as an approximation to the diffusion coefficient of our gas. So:

$$F_{\text{inc}} = \frac{1}{3}\lambda\bar{u}\frac{\partial C}{\partial z} \tag{9.19}$$

Catalyzed Flux

One can imagine how the behaviour of a catalyst could be studied experimentally. Keeping a well-mixed body of gas in contact with a catalyst at a constant temperature and pressure, for a given concentration of gas, the experimentalist will observe a certain number of moles catalysed per second (per square meter). If the concentration is not too high, then we would expect the catalyzed flux to be proportional to concentration. That is, if we double the concentration, we double the number of molecules hitting the surface, thus double the number of opportunities for a molecule to be catalysed. (At higher concentrations, the catalyst will saturate.)

$$F_{\text{cat}} \propto C \tag{9.20}$$

We are assuming that if a molecule strikes the surface, it has an opportunity to be catalysed, and the *probability* that it *is* catalysed does not change with C. Define k_{cat} as the probability that a particle striking the surface is subsequently catalysed (rather than bouncing off or desorbing before being catalysed).

(It is possible to break k_{cat} down into a probability k_{ads} that an incident particle adsorbs, and a conditional probability (per unit time) $k_{\text{ads}\to\text{cat}}$ that an already-adsorbed particle is catalysed. Essentially, we are assuming that $k_{\text{ads}\to\text{cat}}$ is large enough that the dwell time $1/k_{\text{ads}\to\text{cat}}$ is shorter than the mean time between impacts at a catalyst site. In the fuller treatment, one accounts for a pool of adsorbed particles that may build up if $k_{\text{ads}\to\text{cat}}$ is low. At some level of coverage, there is a non-negligible chance that an incident particle will bounce off an adsorbed particle, rather than striking the catalyst. In these saturated conditions, k_{cat} stops being a constant and becomes a function of C. This treatment leads to the Langmuir equation. However, the simplified treatment we give here is compatible with our effective boundary parameter expressions.)

We can apply some gas kinetics. In Appendix A, we show that the flux incident on a surface in a gas of concentration C is:

$$F = \frac{1}{4}\bar{u}C \tag{9.21}$$

Since k_{cat} is the probability that an incident particle is subsequently catalysed, the flux of particles hitting the surface and being catalysed out of existence is:

$$F_{\text{cat}} = \frac{1}{4}k_{\text{cat}}\bar{u}C \tag{9.22}$$

Catalyst Boundary Condition

As noted, in the steady-state, by mass balance, $F_{\text{inc}} = F_{\text{cat}}$. Therefore:

$$\frac{1}{3}\lambda\bar{u}\frac{\partial C}{\partial z} = \frac{1}{4}k_{\text{cat}}\bar{u}C \tag{9.23}$$

Let us introduce the catalytic parameter:

$$b = \frac{4}{3}\frac{\lambda}{k_{\text{cat}}} \tag{9.24}$$

Then the catalyst boundary condition is:

$$C = b\frac{\partial C}{\partial z} \tag{9.25}$$

which once again resembles the Navier slip condition. Furthermore, b again has units of length, since it is a multiple of the mean free path.

If the catalyst is heterogeneous, perhaps due to nanostructure, then the catalytic parameter $b(x, y)$ is a function on the surface of the catalyst.

9.2.2 Solution

We can provide a ready-made solution to

$$\nabla^2 C = 0 \qquad \text{in the bulk} \tag{9.26}$$

$$C = b\frac{\partial C}{\partial z} \qquad \text{on the boundary} \tag{9.27}$$

provided that we know $b(x, y)$ as a function of position on the catalyst surface. The homogenization technique may be applied, and an effective parameter for catalytic activity b_{eff} can be calculated.

Since k_{cat} is a probability between 0 and 1, b is in the range $\frac{4}{3}\lambda$ to ∞. The mean free path of air at standard temperature and pressure is $\lambda = 68\text{nm}$. However temperatures and pressures in automotive catalytic converters are much higher: they need a temperature of at least 250°C to work properly, and actual operating temperatures vary from 300°C at idle up to 1000°C if driven by bogans. Now,

$$\lambda = \frac{k_{\text{B}}T}{\sqrt{2}\pi d^2 p} \tag{9.28}$$

(where k_{B} is Boltzmann's constant, T is temperature, p is pressure and d is the diameter of the gas particle). So, if typical T is double or triple room

temperature, and p is somewhat higher than ambient, then we would expect $\lambda \sim 100$nm, and similarly:

$$b \geq 100 \text{ nanometers} \tag{9.29}$$

The height of the domain P depends on how the catalytic converter is engineered, but is at least millimeters. If the catalyst is truly 'nanostructured', with a period L of at most tens of nanometers, then obviously $L \ll P$, and the harmonic mean formula for rough surfaces should give a good approximation for the effective catalytic parameter of the surface. If the catalyst surface is described by the periodic function $h(x, y)$, then we have:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{9.30}$$

Conversely, if the effective catalytic activity of a nanostuctured catalyst is measured, and compared with the standard flat plane morphology, then the activity of the most active regions of the catalyst may be estimated using the homogenized harmonic mean (or mean) formula.

In the dilute limit, the mean free path λ is approximately constant. Therefore, since $b = \frac{4}{3}\frac{\lambda}{k_{\text{cat}}}$, we have

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \frac{4\lambda}{3\left\langle k_{\text{cat}}\sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}\right\rangle} \tag{9.31}$$

Solving $b = \frac{4}{3}\frac{\lambda}{k_{\text{cat}}}$ for k_{cat} we may define an effective catalytic activity:

$$k_{\text{cat(eff)}} = \frac{4\lambda}{3b_{\text{eff}}} \tag{9.32}$$

which gives:

$$k_{\text{cat(eff)}} = \left\langle k_{\text{cat}}\sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}\right\rangle \tag{9.33}$$

Therefore, the effective catalytic activity of a nanostructured catalyst with a short dwell time and negligible desorption, is simply the average activity of its various regions, weighted by the area of contact between solid and gas.

Chapter 10

Conclusion

10.1 Summary

In this PhD thesis we studied the effective slip length of Stokes flow over rough heterogeneous surfaces. In our mathematical model, the rough surface is modelled as a periodic function $h(x, y)$, and the local intrinsic slip length is modelled as a periodic function $b(x, y)$. The period L of both functions is the same. The slip function $b(x, y)$ has a minimum $b_{\min}$ and a maximum $b_{\max}$. At some height P above the surface, a fixed velocity or shear rate drives the fluid.

Using the homogenization technique for partial differential equations, we showed that if L is much smaller than other length scales, then the effective slip length is well-approximated by the harmonic mean of intrinsic slip lengths, weighted by area of contact between fluid and surface:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1 + |\nabla h|^2}}{b(x, y)} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{10.1}$$

Using a quite different technique, a perturbation method, we replicated this result for the simplified case where the surface is flat, not rough:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b(x,y)} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{10.2}$$

The perturbative result reconciles with the homogenized result, since for a flat surface $\sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2} = 1$. The perturbative result also applies when L is much smaller than other length scales.

Also using the perturbation method, we studied flat surfaces in the limit of vanishing slip length. If $b_{\max} \ll P$, then the slip length is expected to be best approximated by the area-weighted average of intrinsic slip lengths:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b(x,y) \rangle \tag{10.3}$$

We then tested these effective slip length formulae with numerical simulations using the finite element method. The tests confirmed that the formula are excellent approximations in their respective limits. For example, if L is 5% of P, then $b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1}$ is within 1% of the effective slip length calculated from the FEM simulation. The numerics also revealed that the harmonic mean formula is a surprisingly good approximation in the case where L is of the same order as b, and both are smaller than P. Finally, the numerics suggested that the simple mean formula is a good approximation only when b is on the order of two orders of magnitude smaller than L, which itself is much smaller than P.

To summarise:

$$\text{If } L \ll P, b: \qquad b_{\text{eff}} \simeq \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{10.4}$$

$$\text{If } L \sim b \ll P: \qquad b_{\text{eff}} \approx \left\langle \frac{\sqrt{1+|\nabla h|^2}}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} \tag{10.5}$$

$$\text{If } b \ll L \ll P: \qquad b_{\text{eff}} \simeq \langle b \rangle \tag{10.6}$$

10.2 Consequences

What are the consequences of these formulae for the engineers of, say, nanostructured superhydrophobic surfaces?

Consider a **binary** surface, composed of two different surface types, low-slip regions (eg. Teflon), and high-slip regions (eg. air gaps). Let ϕ be the area fraction of the surface that is occupied the low-slip region. Then given fixed intrinsic slip lengths b_{low} and b_{high} for the two regions, the two effective slip expressions are:

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \left\langle \frac{1}{b} \right\rangle^{-1} = \left[\phi \frac{1}{b_{\text{low}}} + (1-\phi) \frac{1}{b_{\text{high}}} \right]^{-1} \tag{10.7}$$

and

$$b_{\text{eff}} = \langle b \rangle = \phi b_{\text{low}} + (1-\phi) b_{\text{high}} \tag{10.8}$$

We plot the predicted effective slip lengths as a function of ϕ in Figure (10.1).

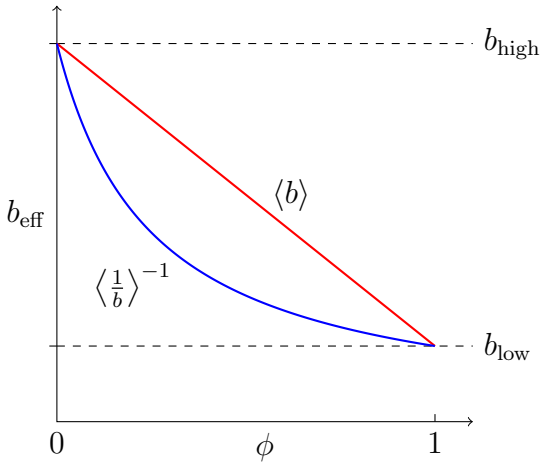


Figure 10.1: The harmonic mean b_{eff} formula (blue), and mean formula (red, straight), as functions of ϕ, for a flat binary surface where ϕ is the area fraction with b_{low}.

The graph of Figure (10.1) is possibly bad news for a nanoengineer aiming to maximise effective slip. A typical nanoengineering effort may involve a nanopatterned surface, say nanogrooves, with a period of tens of nanometers, on the wall of a micron-sized pipe. Air trapped in the nanogrooves creates a liquid-gas interface with a slip length on the order of microns. A credible slip length for the solid surface is perhaps 20 nm (see Chapter 2). Then $L \ll P, b$ or $L \sim b \ll P$, and the harmonic mean formula of Equation (10.7) applies. As Figure (10.1) shows, b_{eff} is **dominated by the lowest slip present,** and a large b_{eff} is achieved only with a very small fraction of low-slip surface.

10.3 Future Work

We have mathematically rigorous results for an approximate b_{eff} that is a good approximation if $L \ll P$, and a progressively better approximation as L/P gets smaller. Assuming $L \ll P$, we have a perturbative approximation that in the limit of b vanishing, b_{eff} is given by the simple average.

We do not have any mathematically rigorous results for regimes where $L \sim P$ or $L > P$. These regimes could apply in some lubrication systems for example. The concept of effective slip length could be different in these situations – it may not arise from the diffusion of momentum, but could be some kind of 'forced' average caused by the constraints of the physical system. Work on these regimes is a possibility for the future.

Finally, the homogenization technique is a very powerful method that can be applied to many problems featuring periodic heterogeneous media. Finding further applications of homogenization is of definite future interest.

Appendix A

De Gennes's Gas Kinetic Theory of Slip

We seek to replicate the work of de Gennes. In his elegant little paper in Langmuir from 2002, entitled simply "On Fluid/Wall Slippage" [18], he presented a gas kinetic expression for slip length. However, the paper seems to contain a few typographical errors, and the result is stated in terms of the non-standard quantity $\bar{v}_z$, which is apparently defined as the average of the *absolute value* of the z component of velocity.

As an exercise, we derive the expression from scratch using the more standard scalar quantity of particle *speed*, v, with our final expression in terms of average speed $\bar{v}$. We show that our results ultimately agree with those of de Gennes.

We start by figuring out the number of gas molecules hitting a surface per second, then calculate the momentum transferred per second, yielding a shear stress, from which a slip length follows.

A.1 Particle Flux

Consider a gas of density ρ. If the mass of each particle is m, then the *number* density of the gas is ρ/m. This has units of number per cubic meter, and is therefore a concentration, C.

Each particle in the gas has a different velocity. The directions of motion will be uniformly distributed over all solid angles. In an ideal gas, the speeds come from the Maxwell-Boltzmann distribution. In general, the gas has some speed probability distribution $P(v)$, in the frequentist sense that fraction $P(v)$ of all atoms have speed v.

Our strategy is to split the gas into separate ensembles of particles, each ensemble defined as a group of particles **all with the same speed** v_{ens}. At the end of the derivation, we will sum over all ensembles – for now we work with a single arbitrary ensemble, identified by its speed v_{ens}.

Consider a layer of gas over some area A on the surface. Let the layer width be l, where l is well under the *mean free path* in the gas. So, particles within the layer are sparsely distributed, and we can assume they do not interact.

There are CAl molecules in the layer, and fraction $P(v_{\text{ens}})$ of them have speed v_{ens}. Thus, the ensemble indexed by v_{ens} contributes

$$CAlP(v_{\text{ens}}) \tag{A.1}$$

atoms to the layer.

We are interested in how many atoms **from the layer** hit the surface in some timeslice; during the time interval, we do not want outside atoms to enter the layer then hit the surface. To ensure this, we define an 'isolation' time:

First, define the layer to be the *closed* interval $z \in [0, l]$; then an atom at distance l from the wall is the *outermost* atom in the layer.

Such an atom, at distance l from the wall, travelling via the shortest path to the wall, i.e. perpendicular to the wall, will hit the wall in time:

$$t_0 = \frac{l}{v_{\text{ens}}} \tag{A.2}$$

Therefore, any atom outside the layer – further than l from the wall – cannot hit the wall in time t_0. So t_0 is the isolation time we need.

By construction, in time t_0, each ensemble atom travels distance l (in a random direction).

Now, we want to know what fraction of the ensemble atoms in the layer hit the wall in time interval t_0.

Consider a sphere of radius l centred on an atom. The surface of the l-sphere is the set of all possible positions of the atom after time t_0. The probability that an atom hits the wall is equal to the fraction of the area of the l-sphere that intersects the wall. This area of intersection area depends on the distance h that the l-sphere protrudes into the wall. See Figure (A.1).

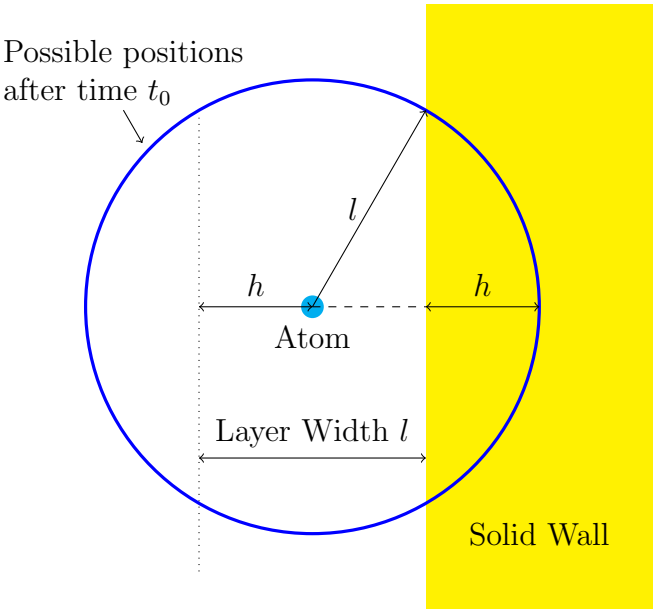


Figure A.1: Some fraction of the l-sphere intersects the wall.

$$\text{Area of sphere:} \quad 4\pi l^2$$
$$\text{Area of spherical cap:} \quad 2\pi lh$$

$\therefore$ fraction of spherical surface inside solid is:

$$\phi(h) = \frac{2\pi lh}{4\pi l^2} = \frac{h}{2l} \tag{A.3}$$

The distance h that the sphere penetrates into the wall is equal to the distance from the layer boundary to the atom's starting position. So, h varies from 0 to l, as the starting position of the atom may be anywhere between the layer boundary and the solid wall.

For a group of atoms with starting position a distance h inside the layer, we know what fraction of them hit the wall. To find the fraction for *all* atoms in the layer, we *average* over all positions in the layer. That is, we integrate $\phi(h)$ over the layer, and divide by domain size l:

$$\phi = \frac{1}{l}\int_0^l \frac{h}{2l}\, dh = \frac{1}{2l^2}\int_0^l h\, dh = \frac{1}{2l^2}[\frac{1}{2}h^2]_0^l = \frac{1}{4l^2}[l^2 - 0] = \frac{1}{4} \tag{A.4}$$

So, in time interval t_0, 1/4 of ensemble atoms within the layer hit the wall.

Recall that the number of *ensemble* atoms in the layer is $CAlP(v_{\text{ens}})$, thus, the number hitting area A per second is:

$$\frac{\frac{1}{4}CAlP(v_{\text{ens}})}{t_0} = \frac{\frac{1}{4}CAlP(v_{\text{ens}})}{\frac{l}{v_{\text{ens}}}} = \frac{1}{4}CAP(v_{\text{ens}})v_{\text{ens}} \tag{A.5}$$

Note that layer width l has cancelled out.

Define the 'ensemble flux' as the number of particles with given speed v_{ens} hitting the wall per second per unit area:

$$F(v_{\text{ens}}) = \frac{1}{4}CP(v_{\text{ens}})v_{\text{ens}} \tag{A.6}$$

To find the *total* number of atoms hitting of *all* speeds, we simply need to integrate over all speeds. In other words, sum over all possible ensembles:

$$F = \int_0^\infty F(v)\, dv = \int_0^\infty \frac{1}{4} C P(v_{\text{ens}}) v_{\text{ens}}\, dv = \frac{C}{4} \int_0^\infty P(v_{\text{ens}}) v_{\text{ens}}\, dv \quad \text{(A.7)}$$

Now – here's the cunning bit – the construction $\int P(v_{\text{ens}}) v_{\text{ens}}\, dv$ is just the *average* of v, denoted $\bar{v}$. Hence:

$$F = \frac{1}{4} C \bar{v} \quad \text{(A.8)}$$

Note that we did *not* need to know the specific statistical mechanical probability distribution for the particle speeds.

In the next section, we deal with the momentum of gas particles, so it is expedient to express concentration as $C = \rho/m$, where m is the mass of a gas particle. Then the flux is:

$$F = \frac{\rho \bar{v}}{4m} \quad \text{(A.9)}$$

A.2 Lateral Momentum Transfer = Shear Stress

Consider a bulk of water separated from a solid surface by a very thin gas layer of thickness l. Assume l is less than the mean free path in the gas, so that the previous analysis is valid.

Assume that the water bulk is moving, and that the bottom surface (facing the gas) has a constant tangential velocity v_s.

The gas is a vapour of liquid molecules, detaching and reattaching from the bulk liquid. Each molecule detaches from the liquid in a random direction, with an *average* tangential velocity of v_s. Each atom has mass m, so has average lateral momentum mv_s. Each atom subsequently hits the solid surface, and sticks to the surface – an inelastic collision that transfers all of momentum mv_s to the surface. See Figure (A.2)

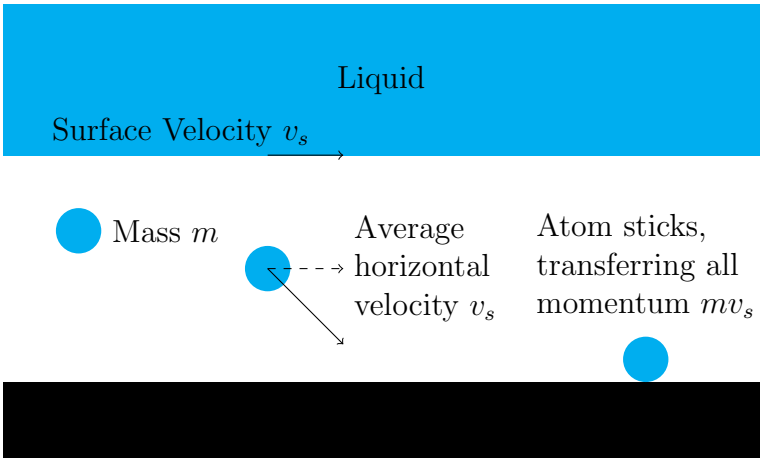


Figure A.2: Each incident atom transfers average momentum mv_s to the solid surface.

Recall, the number of particles hitting the solid surface is $\rho\bar{v}/4m$ per second per area.

Thus, momentum transferred to the surface per second per area:

$$\frac{1}{A}\frac{dP}{dt} = \frac{\rho\bar{v}}{4m}mv_s = \frac{1}{4}\rho\bar{v}v_s \tag{A.10}$$

This force per unit area is a *shear stress:*

$$\sigma = \frac{1}{4}\rho\bar{v}v_s \tag{A.11}$$

Now, a velocity gradient in the bulk of a *viscous* fluid of viscosity η causes a shear stress:

$$\sigma = \eta\left|\frac{dv(z)}{dz}\right| \tag{A.12}$$

At the surface, however, dv/dz may be infinite, so surface shear stress may be better conceptualized — by analogy with solid-solid friction — with a friction coefficient k:

$$\sigma = kv_s \tag{A.13}$$

Equating the gas kinetic shear stress with the frictive shear stress:

$$\sigma = kv_s = \frac{1}{4}\rho\bar{v}v_s \quad \Rightarrow \quad k = \frac{1}{4}\rho\bar{v} \tag{A.14}$$

Alternatively, since dv/dz is defined *above* the surface, we may extrapolate dv/dz down into the surface, getting the Navier slip condition:

$$v_s = b \left| \frac{dv(z)}{dz} \right| \tag{A.15}$$

Equating frictive and viscous shear stresses, and substituting v_s:

$$\sigma = k v_s = kb \left| \frac{dv(z)}{dz} \right| = \eta \left| \frac{dv(z)}{dz} \right| \tag{A.16}$$

Therefore, quite generally:

$$b = \frac{\eta}{k} \tag{A.17}$$

And for our de Gennes-inspired gas kinetic theory:

$$b = \frac{4\eta}{\rho \bar{v}} \tag{A.18}$$

This is the slip length in the Navier slip boundary condition as experienced by the fluid at the **bottom of the liquid.** If we consider the slip length to be a parameter of the **solid** surface, then we must subtract the gas layer thickness l:

$$b = -l + \frac{4\eta}{\rho \bar{v}} \tag{A.19}$$

If the gas layer is only a few atom diameters thick, then $l < 1$ nm, and is therefore negligible.

de Gennes himself says:

$$b = -l + \frac{\eta}{\rho \bar{v}_z} \simeq \frac{\eta}{\rho \bar{v}_z} \tag{A.20}$$

— Note that I have corrected what I think are typos; his original paper says:

$$b = -l + \frac{\eta}{\rho \bar{v}_x} \simeq \frac{\eta}{\rho v_z} \tag{A.21}$$

A.3 Reconciling with de Gennes

We use average speed (in any direction) $\bar{v}$. De Gennes used average speed *in the z direction*, $\bar{v}_z$.

$$\text{We have shown:} \quad b \simeq \frac{4\eta}{\rho\bar{v}}, \quad \text{de Gennes claims:} \quad b \simeq \frac{\eta}{\rho\bar{v}_z} \tag{A.22}$$

If

$$\bar{v} = 4\bar{v}_z \tag{A.23}$$

then our analyses are in perfect agreement.

De Gennes defines $\bar{v}_z$ like this:

$$\bar{v}_z = \int_0^\infty \frac{1}{(2\pi)^{1/2} v_{\text{th}}} v_z \mathrm{e}^{-v_z^2/2v_{\text{th}}^2}\, \mathrm{d}v_z = v_{\text{th}}/(2\pi)^{1/2} \tag{A.24}$$

where $v_{\text{th}}^2 = kT/m$.

That is:

$$\bar{v}_z = \int_0^\infty \sqrt{\frac{m}{2\pi kT}} v_z \mathrm{e}^{\frac{-\frac{1}{2}mv_z^2}{kT}}\, dv_z = \sqrt{\frac{kT}{2\pi m}} \tag{A.25}$$

Now, in the Maxwell-Boltzmann statistics for an ideal gas, the distribution of a given *component* of velocity is:

$$f_v(v_z) = \sqrt{\frac{m}{2\pi kT}} \exp\left[\frac{-mv_z^2}{2kT}\right] \tag{A.26}$$

which is clearly what de Gennes is playing with.

This is a Gaussian distribution, therefore the average of v_z, given by $\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f_v(v_z) v_z\, dv_z$ is **zero.**

Hence, de Gennes's definition $\bar{v}_z = \int_0^\infty f_v(v_z) v_z\, dv_z$ is the average of the **absolute value** of v_z.

So to reconcile. The Maxwell-Boltzmann statistics yield an average value of the particle speed:

$$\bar{v} = \sqrt{\frac{8kT}{\pi m}} \tag{A.27}$$

which is:

$$\bar{v} = \sqrt{\frac{8kT}{\pi m}} = \sqrt{\frac{16kT}{2\pi m}} = \sqrt{16}\sqrt{\frac{kT}{2\pi m}} = 4\sqrt{\frac{kT}{2\pi m}} = 4\bar{v}_z \tag{A.28}$$

So we have found that $\bar{v} = 4\bar{v}_z$, hence our analysis and that of de Gennes reconcile perfectly. Therefore

$$b \simeq \frac{4\eta}{\rho\bar{v}} = \frac{\eta}{\rho\bar{v}_z} \tag{A.29}$$

Appendix B

Replicating John Philip 1972

The first known expression for an effective slip length appeared in 1972, in a paper in ZAMP by John R. Philip entitled "Flows Satisfying Mixed No-Slip and No-Shear Conditions" [44].

In the paper, John R. Philip says that the limit of

$$W_3 = \Im\left[\alpha^{-1}\cos^{-1}\left\{\frac{\cos(\alpha\Theta)}{\cos\alpha}\right\} - \Theta\right] \tag{B.1}$$

as $y \to \infty$ is

$$W_3 = \alpha^{-1}\ln\sec\alpha \tag{B.2}$$

Let us prove this forthwith.

$\Theta = x + iy$ is a complex number, α is real. Trig identities for *complex* cosine and exponential:

$$\cos z = \frac{e^{iz} + e^{-iz}}{2} \tag{B.3}$$

$$e^{i\theta} = \cos\theta + i\sin\theta \tag{B.4}$$

B.1 Expand cosine term, dump negligible parts

In Euler's formula $e^{i\theta} = cis(\theta)$, if θ is *real*, then $e^{i\theta}$ traces out the unit circle in $\mathbb{C}$, with θ being the angle.

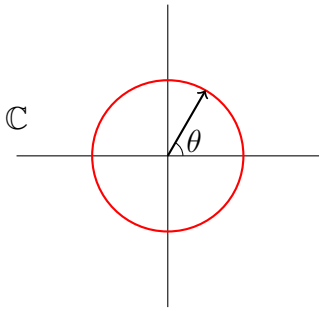


Figure B.1: Euler's formula $e^{i\theta}$ for real θ .

This gives insight into the $\cos z$ function. If z is real, then $\frac{1}{2}e^{iz}$ and $\frac{1}{2}e^{-iz}$ are two vectors of length $\frac{1}{2}$ that cycle in opposite directions, with z being the angle. Then $\cos z$ is the sum of the two vectors, which always ends on the real line between -1 and 1, as shown in Figure (B.2).

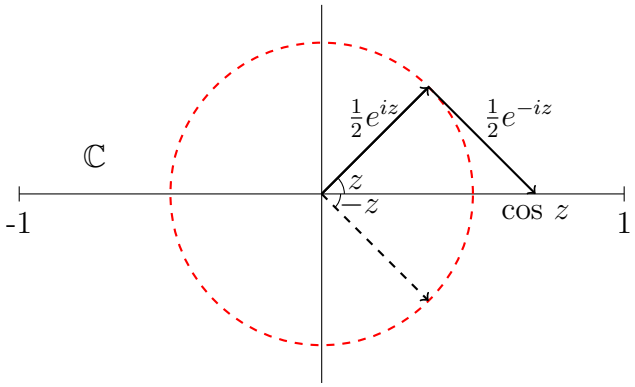


Figure B.2: The complex cosine.

With this insight, it is useful to rewrite $\cos z$ as:

$$\cos(x+iy) = \frac{e^{i(x+iy)} + e^{-i(x+iy)}}{2} = e^{y}\frac{1}{2}e^{-ix} + e^{-y}\frac{1}{2}e^{ix} \tag{B.5}$$

Then it is clear that $\cos(x+iy)$ is the sum of two rotating vectors in $\mathbb{C}$ with amplitudes e^{y} and e^{-y}. A consequence is that for large y, e^{y} is *very*

large, while e^{-y} is negligible, therefore $\cos(x+iy)$ is dominated by the vector $e^y \frac{1}{2} e^{-ix}$. See Figure (B.3).

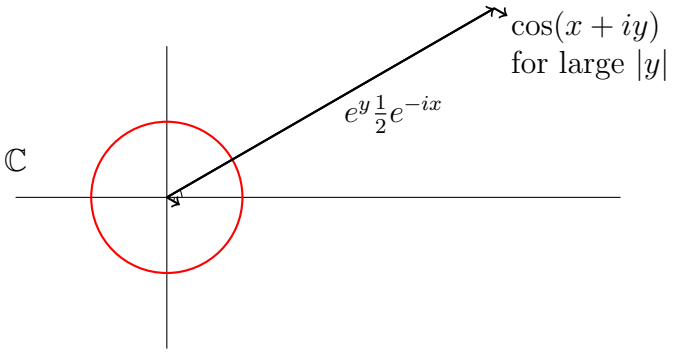


Figure B.3: Complex cosine at large $|y|$.

$$\text{Therefore} \quad \cos(x+iy) \to \frac{e^y e^{-ix}}{2} \quad \text{as} \quad y \to \infty \tag{B.6}$$

$$\cos z \to \frac{1}{2} e^{-iz} \quad \text{as} \quad y \to \infty \tag{B.7}$$

B.2 Inverse Cosine at Large y

As $y \to \infty$:

$$w = \cos z \to \frac{1}{2} e^{-iz} \tag{B.8}$$

Solve $w = \cos z$ for z to get:

$$\arccos w = z$$

Likewise solve $w = \frac{1}{2} e^{-iz}$ for z:

$$w = \frac{1}{2} e^{-iz}$$
$$2w = e^{-iz}$$
$$\ln(2w) = -iz$$
$$i \ln(2w) = -i^2 z$$
$$i \ln(2w) = z$$

Equate the two expressions to obtain the inverse cosine in terms of a logarithm:

$$\arccos z = i \ln(2z) \tag{B.9}$$

B.3 Put into J. R. Philip's Expression

$$W_3 = \Im \left[\alpha^{-1} \cos^{-1} \left\{ \frac{\cos(\alpha\Theta)}{\cos\alpha} \right\} - \Theta \right] \tag{B.10}$$

As $y \to \infty$, the cosine expression may be substituted:

$$W_3 = \Im \left[\alpha^{-1} \cos^{-1} \left\{ \frac{\frac{1}{2}e^{-i\alpha\Theta}}{\cos\alpha} \right\} - \Theta \right] \tag{B.11}$$

And the inverse cosine expression may also be substituted:

$$W_3 = \Im \left[i\alpha^{-1} \ln \left\{ 2\frac{\frac{1}{2}e^{-i\alpha\Theta}}{\cos\alpha} \right\} - \Theta \right] \tag{B.12}$$

$$W_3 = \Im \left[i\alpha^{-1} \ln \left\{ e^{-i\alpha\Theta} \frac{1}{\cos\alpha} \right\} - \Theta \right] \tag{B.13}$$

Recall that $\ln ab = \ln a + \ln b$.

$$W_3 = \Im \left[i\alpha^{-1} \ln \left\{ e^{-i\alpha\Theta} \right\} + i\alpha^{-1} \ln \left\{ \frac{1}{\cos\alpha} \right\} - \Theta \right] \tag{B.14}$$

Invoke definition of logarithm: $\ln e^z = z$.

$$W_3 = \Im \left[i\alpha^{-1} \left\{ -i\alpha\Theta \right\} + i\alpha^{-1} \ln \left\{ \frac{1}{\cos\alpha} \right\} - \Theta \right] \tag{B.15}$$

$$W_3 = \Im \left[\Theta + i\alpha^{-1} \ln \left\{ \frac{1}{\cos\alpha} \right\} - \Theta \right] \tag{B.16}$$

$$W_3 = \Im \left[i\alpha^{-1} \ln \left\{ \frac{1}{\cos\alpha} \right\} \right] \tag{B.17}$$

$$W_3 = \alpha^{-1} \ln \sec\alpha \tag{B.18}$$

We have demonstrated that which we set out to prove.

Appendix C

Dimensional Analysis of Perturbation Height

The highly influential paper "Achieving large slip with superhydrophobic surfaces: Scaling laws for generic geometries" by Christophe Ybert *et al.* [64] gives several scaling laws. In the derivation for the first scaling law, they appear to assume that if a surface feature of width a causes a perturbation in the flow that extends a height d, then d scales as a.

In this appendix we use dimensional analysis to argue that for a flow with a fixed velocity and pressure, then it is indeed true that d scales as a.

C.1 Simple Analysis

The physical situation is that of two-dimensional perturbed plug flow. The liquid sits on top of a sparse nanograting, so that most of the fluid boundary is a liquid-air interface, which is assumed to have negligible drag (perfect slip). The ridges of the nanograting have width a, and the liquid sticks to the top them (no slip). The flow is transverse to the ridges, and is very close to plug flow, since the fluid boundary is mostly perfect slip.

The plug-like flow is perturbed by the presence of the no-slip ridges; the perturbation can be considered to be the region where flow is different

from pure plug flow to some (arbitrary) degree. The perturbed region has a perturbation height d. See Figure (C.1).

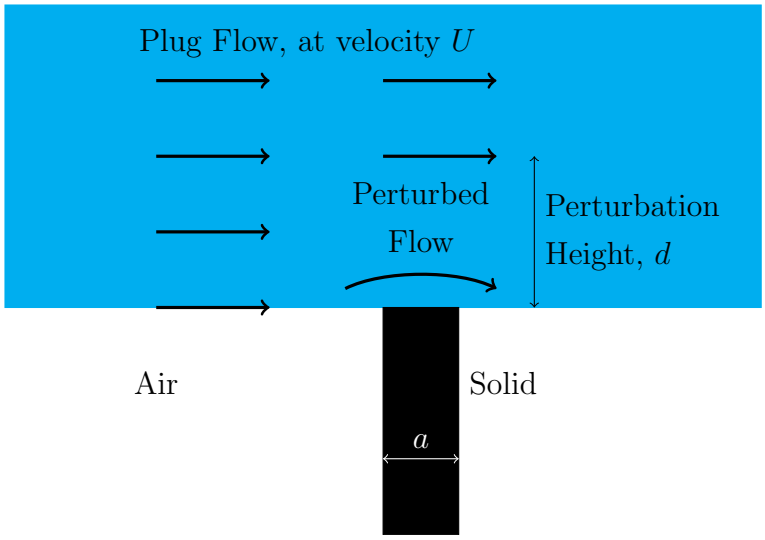


Figure C.1: Plug-like flow perturbed by widely-separated no-slip ridges.

What is perturbation height d?
It will be a function of some fundamental physical parameters:

- Ridge width a
- Velocity U
- Viscosity η
- Density ρ
- Pressure p

In other words $d = g(a, U, \eta, \rho, p)$. Or equivalently, $f(d, a, U, \eta, \rho, p) = 0$.

Physical variables have dimensions:

$$d = [m], \quad a = [m], \quad U = \left[\frac{m}{s}\right], \quad \eta = \left[\frac{kg}{ms}\right], \quad \rho = \left[\frac{kg}{m^3}\right], \quad p = \left[\frac{kg}{ms^2}\right] \tag{C.1}$$

Units are arbitrary, so it is useful to obtain the height d in terms of the other length scale a. In other words, d and a have some *ratio* that is a dimensionless function of the other physical variables:

$$\frac{d}{a} = \text{Dimensionless } f(U, \eta, \rho, p) \tag{C.2}$$

Furthermore, the physical variables will appear as *powers*, multiplied by some constant, or as the argument of functions such as log and cosine. Those functions are dimensionless, so their arguments must be dimensionless. Wrapping those functions into the dimensionless variable C, we have something like:

$$\frac{d}{a} = C\ U^w \eta^x \rho^y p^z \tag{C.3}$$

Now, the physical variables on the right hand side must be in powers such that the units cancel out to be a dimensionless constant.

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Constant} &= \left[\frac{m}{s}\right]^w \left[\frac{kg}{ms}\right]^x \left[\frac{kg}{m^3}\right]^y \left[\frac{kg}{ms^2}\right]^z \\ &= \left[\frac{m^w kg^x kg^y kg^z}{s^w m^x s^x m^{3y} m^z s^{2z}}\right] = \left[\frac{m^w kg^{x+y+z}}{m^{x+3y+z} s^{w+x+2z}}\right] \\ \text{Constant} &= \left[kg^{x+y+z} m^{w-x-3y-z} s^{-w-x-2z}\right] \end{aligned} \tag{C.4}$$

Thus, the units cancel iff the indices w, x, y, z simultaneously satisfy:

$$x + y + z = 0 \tag{C.5}$$

$$w - x - 3y - z = 0 \tag{C.6}$$

$$-w - x - 2z = 0 \tag{C.7}$$

We can express and solve these three simultaneous equations with matrix algebra.

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & -1 & -3 & -1 \\ -1 & -1 & 0 & -2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} w \\ x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \tag{C.8}$$

Gauss-Jordan reduction:

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & -1 & -3 & -1 \\ -1 & -1 & 0 & -2 \end{bmatrix} \text{Swap R1 \& R2} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & -3 & -1 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\ -1 & -1 & 0 & -2 \end{bmatrix} \text{R3 + R1} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & -3 & -1 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & -2 & -3 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\text{R3 + 2R2} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & -3 & -1 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 \end{bmatrix} \text{R1 + R2} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -2 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 \end{bmatrix} \text{R2 + R3} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -2 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\text{R3 × -1} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -2 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \text{R1 + 2R3} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Our simultaneous equations have simplified to:

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} w \\ x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{matrix} w + 2z = 0 \\ x = 0 \\ y + z = 0 \end{matrix} \quad \text{so} \quad \begin{matrix} w = -2z \\ x = 0 \\ y = -z \end{matrix}$$

As a check, we substitute $w = -2z$, $x = 0$ and $y = -z$ back into

$$\begin{matrix} x + y + z = 0 \\ w - x - 3y - z = 0 \\ -w - x - 2z = 0 \end{matrix} \quad \text{getting} \quad \begin{matrix} 0 + -z + z = 0 \\ -2z + 0 + 3z - z = 0 \\ 2z - 0 - 2z = 0 \end{matrix} \quad \text{which is} \quad \begin{matrix} 0 = 0 \\ 0 = 0 \\ 0 = 0 \end{matrix}$$

Hence, our formula must be of the form:

$$\frac{d}{a} = C\ U^{-2z} \eta^0 \rho^{-z} p^z \tag{C.9}$$

Interestingly, our formula is *not* a function of viscosity η. For the simplest case of $z = 1$, we have:

$$\frac{d}{a} = C \frac{p}{\rho U^2} \tag{C.10}$$

The dimensionless quantity

$$\frac{\rho U^2}{p} = \frac{[kgm^{-3}][ms^{-1}]^2}{[kgm^{-1}s^{-2}]} = \frac{[kgm^{-1}s^{-2}]}{[kgm^{-1}s^{-2}]} \tag{C.11}$$

has the obscure name of the Ruark number.

But the expressions

$$\frac{d}{a} = C\left(\frac{\rho U^2}{p}\right)^7 \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{d}{a} = \sqrt{\frac{\rho U^2}{p}}\cos\left(\frac{\rho U^2}{p}\right) \tag{C.12}$$

would be equally valid. How can we refine further?

Note that we have explicitly assumed that the ratio d/a is a function of U, η, ρ, p *only.* i.e. d and a do not appear on the right hand side. A more complete treatmeat would relax that assumption. Such a treatment is the Buckingham Pi Theorem. We shall explore this now.

C.2 Formal Treatment - Buckingham π Theorem

Assume there is a physical relationship that can be expressed as $f(a, \rho, U, \eta, p, d) = 0$. Formally, there are 6 dimensional variables, and 3 physical units. So if f *expresses a valid physical law,* there will be 6 - 3 = 3 dimensionless variables, π_1, π_3 and π_2. Then f can be expressed as:

$$\Phi(\pi_1, \pi_2, \pi_3) = 0 \tag{C.13}$$

The relations between physical variables and dimensions are expressed in the dimensional matrix M:

	a	ρ	U	η	p	d
m	1	-3	1	-1	-1	1
kg	0	1	0	1	1	0
s	0	0	-1	-1	-2	0

The components of the dimensional matrix M are the exponents on the fundamental units. The components of a vector $\vec{x}$ are the exponents of the physical variables. The simultaneous equations that express the constraint that the physical formula be dimensionless are expressed as:

$$M\vec{x} = 0 \tag{C.14}$$

We are solving for the appropriate exponents on the physical variables that satisfy the non-dimensionality requirement.

However, there will be a whole *family* of solutions. They form a space; the set of all $\vec{x}$ satisfying $M\vec{x} = 0$. The set is known as the *null space* or *kernel* of M. We would like a basis for the space. The basis vectors will represent the dimensionless variables π_1, π_2, π_3; they will be things like the Reynolds number.

C.2.1 Basis of Nullspace from Column Echelon Form

To find a basis for the null space of M, we use the following technique: Glue the identity matrix I underneath M. Transpose the result, forming a new matrix A. Row reduce A until the part corresponding to M is in row echelon form. Then, the basis vectors are: any row of I with all zeros in the corresponding row of M.

Here goes:

$$\left[\begin{array}{cccccc} 1 & -3 & 1 & -1 & -1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 & -2 & 0 \\ \hline 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{array}\right]^T = \left[\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ -3 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ -1 & 1 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ -1 & 1 & -2 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{array}\right]$$

$$\begin{array}{r} \\ \text{R3 + 3R1} \\ \text{R3 - R1} \\ \text{R4 + R1} \\ \text{R5 + R1} \\ \text{R6 - R1} \end{array} \left[\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 3 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & -2 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{array}\right]$$

$$\begin{array}{r} \\ \\ \text{R3} \times \text{-1} \\ \text{R4 - R2} \\ \text{R5 - R2} \\ \\ \end{array} \left[\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 3 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -2 & -1 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 & -2 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{array}\right]$$

$$\begin{array}{r} \\ \\ \\ \text{R4 + R3} \\ \text{R5 + 2R3} \\ \\ \end{array} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 3 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & -1 & -1 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & -2 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

At this point we can stop; the part corresponding to M (the left three columns) is in row echelon form, with the bottom three rows consisting entirely of zeros. Therefore, the three basis vectors are the bottom three rows of what was the identity matrix:

$$\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, \quad \begin{bmatrix} 0 & -1 & -2 & 0 & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}, \quad \begin{bmatrix} -1 & -1 & -1 & 1 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

whose components are the exponents of our physical variables

$$\begin{bmatrix} a & \rho & U & \eta & p & d \end{bmatrix}$$

We are free to take the *negative* of the basis vectors. If we do this, then the corresponding dimensionless variables appear in the convenient form:

$$\pi_1 = \frac{d}{a}, \quad \pi_2 = \frac{\rho U^2}{p}, \quad \pi_3 = \frac{\rho a U}{\eta} \tag{C.15}$$

Then, the dimensionless number

$$\pi_3 = \frac{\rho a U}{\eta} = \frac{[kgm^{-3}][m][ms^{-1}]}{[kgm^{-1}s^{-1}]} = \frac{[kgm^{-1}s^{-1}]}{[kgm^{-1}s^{-1}]} = 1$$

is the familiar *Reynolds* number, while $\pi_2 = \frac{\rho U^2}{p}$ is the more obscure *Ruark* number.

(The three vectors *are* linearly independent – none can be obtained by a linear combination of the other two, since each contains a unique physical variable (specifically d, p and η). But π_3 is coupled to the other two; in some physical sense, the variables are not independent.)

So while our naive treatment showed that d/a is a function of the Ruark number, the full Buckingham Pi theorem shows that there is a *third* possible dimensionless variable, the Reynolds number:

$$\pi_1 = \frac{d}{a}, \quad \pi_2 = \frac{\rho U^2}{p}, \quad \pi_3 = \frac{\rho a U}{\eta}$$

Note that these are not the *only* possible basis vectors for the nullspace of M. But any basis can be expressed in terms of the basis we have found here. Therefore, any formula $\Phi(\pi_1, \pi_2, \pi_3) = 0$ (for any basis π_1, π_2, π_3) can be rewritten so that the ratio d/a appears as a variable, and can be rearranged to:

$$\frac{d}{a} = \Phi(Ru, Re) \tag{C.16}$$

$$\text{where} \quad Ru = \frac{\rho U^2}{p}, \quad Re = \frac{\rho a U}{\eta} \tag{C.17}$$

C.3 Conclusion

The ratio d/a is an unknown function of the Ruark number and the Reynolds number. Therefore:

In a series of experiments with a fluid of constant density and viscosity, **for fixed velocity and pressure,** perturbation height d scales as anomaly width a.

Note that the ratio d/a is not fixed, so d is not *determined* by a. If a is fixed, then d may change as a function of U, ρ, p etc.

Appendix D

The Variational Formulation

In this appendix, we provide an in-depth explanation of the variational formulation of PDEs and its relation to the calculus of variations. This appendix is intended to be a stand-alone document, that can be read without reference to Chapter 6. As such, it contains material which is duplicated in Chapter 6.

D.1 Variational Form

The variational form comes originally from the Calculus of Variations. The canonical use for the calculus of variations is with a *minimization* problem. We seek a *function* on a domain that minimizes some quantity. The quantity to be minimized is a *functional*, a mapping from the space of functions to the real numbers. The functional will be some kind of integral, with the integrand being some combination of the function, its derivatives (of various order), and position in the domain.

$$F(u) = \int_a^b f(u, u', \ldots, x)\, dx, \qquad F(u) \mapsto \mathbb{R} \tag{D.1}$$

The boundary values of the function $u(x)$ are given. The basic concept of calculus of variations is to take $u(x)$ to be the solution function that minimizes the functional F. That being the case, any *variation* away from u, however small, will increase F. Let $v(x)$ be an arbitrary function that is zero at the boundary (i.e. zero at a and b), and let ϵ be a small parameter. Then:

$$F(u) \leq F(u + \epsilon v) \qquad \forall v : v(a) = v(b) = 0 \tag{D.2}$$

This minimizing function and variation are depicted in Figure (D.1).

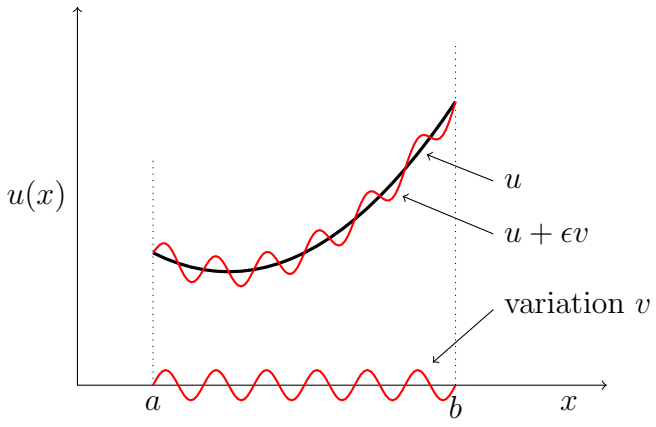


Figure D.1: The minimizing function $u(x)$ and an arbitrary variation $v(x)$ added to it.

For an arbitrary variation v, the small parameter ϵ can be treated as a variable, so that $F(u+\epsilon v)$ is a function from $\mathbb{R}$ to $\mathbb{R}$. Since u minimizes F, $\epsilon = 0$ minimizes $F(\epsilon) : \mathbb{R} \mapsto \mathbb{R}$. The minimum is a stationary point, so the *slope* of $F(\epsilon)$ is zero also at the minimum. That is, for minimizing function u, for any variation v,

$$\frac{d}{d\epsilon}F(u+\epsilon v) = 0 \tag{D.3}$$

This is shown in Figure (D.2).

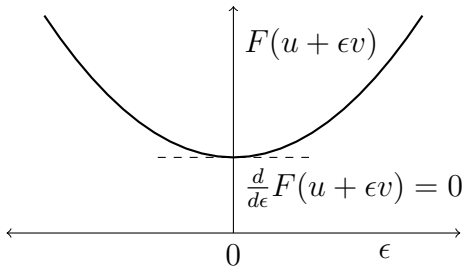


Figure D.2: The slope of $F(\epsilon)$ is zero at the minimum of $F(\epsilon)$.

D.1.1 Example: Energy Balance

For example, consider a film of soapy water suspended across an aperture. At equilibrium, the soap film lies in the x, y plane. Let $u(x, y)$ be the the height of the film above the x, y plane (at point (x, y)), as in the schematic of Figure (D.3).

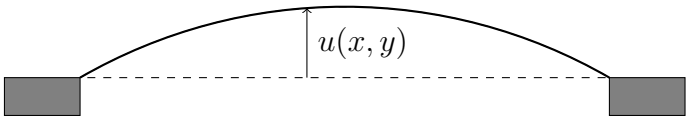


Figure D.3: A film of soapy water suspended across an aperture.

Assume some force below the film distorts it, pushing it upwards. The force does work on the soap film. If f is the force on the film per unit area (pressure), then the work done moving an infinitesimal area element dA a

distance $u(x, y)$ is $dW = ufdA$. Thus the total work done on the soap film is the integral:

$$W = \int_\Omega fu\, dA \tag{D.4}$$

The geometry of the work done appears in Figure (D.4).

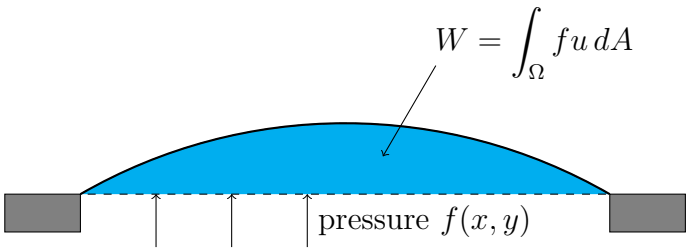


Figure D.4: The work done by the pressure distorting the soap film.

The work done on the soap film is stored as elastic potential energy. The soap film has a surface tension that acts tangentially to the surface. A virtual length dy has a force $2\gamma dy$ acting perpendicularly to it. The force is *constant,* so if the length is moved distance dx, creating new area $dxdy$, the work done is $2\gamma dxdy$. Thus, the change in potential energy is proportional to the change in area.

Consider a tangent plane of $u(x, y)$ located above an infinitesimal area element $dxdy$. The tangent plane is bounded by the vectors $(dx, 0, dx\partial_x u)$ and $(0, dy, dy\partial_y u)$. Their cross product is the normal vector to the plane $\vec{n} = (-dxdy\partial_x u, -dxdy\partial_y u, dxdy)$. The area of the infinitesimal tangent plane is equal to the magnitude of the normal vector:

$$dA = |\vec{n}| = dxdy\sqrt{1 + \partial_x u^2 + \partial_y u^2} \tag{D.5}$$

For convenience, we use $|\nabla u|^2 = \nabla u \cdot \nabla u = \partial_x u^2 + \partial_y u^2$. The total area of the soap film is:

$$A = \int_\Omega \sqrt{1 + |\nabla u|^2}\, dxdy \tag{D.6}$$

If the soap bubble is distorted not too far from its equilibrium shape, then $\partial_x u \ll 1$ and $\partial_y u \ll 1$, so that:

$$\sqrt{1+|\nabla u|^2} \approx \sqrt{1+|\nabla u|^2+\frac{1}{4}|\nabla u|^4} = \sqrt{(1+\frac{1}{2}|\nabla u|^2)^2} = 1+\frac{1}{2}|\nabla u|^2 \tag{D.7}$$

Then the *change* in area from the equilibrium area is:

$$\int_\Omega 1+\frac{1}{2}|\nabla u|^2\,dxdy - \int_\Omega dxdy = \int_\Omega \frac{1}{2}|\nabla u|^2\,dxdy \tag{D.8}$$

Let k be the surface tension coefficient. Then the elastic potential energy is:

$$U = k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2\,dA \tag{D.9}$$

This shown in the schematic of Figure (D.5).

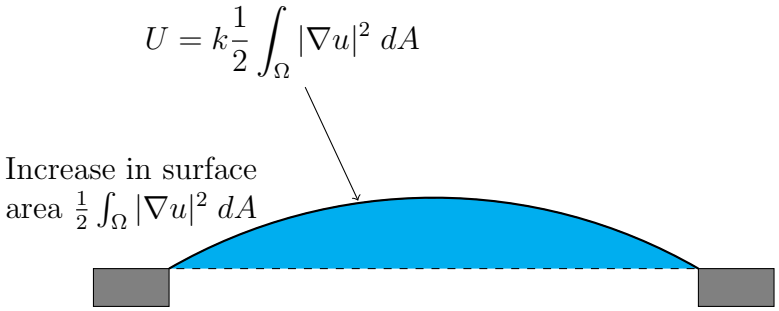


Figure D.5: The elastic potential energy due to the increase in area of the soap film.

The elastic potential energy is exactly equal to the work done on the soap film by the pressure:

$$k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2 \, dA = \int_\Omega fu \, dA \tag{D.10}$$

A summary schematic is shown in Figure (D.6).

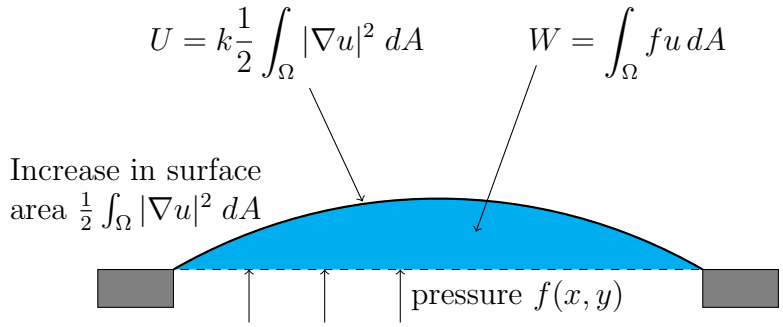


Figure D.6: The work done distorting the soap film is equal to the elastic potential energy due to the increase in area.

NOTE: This also models the energy balance of a deformed rubber membrane, *if* the deformation is small enough that the tension is considered to be *constant* throughout the deformation (rather than increasing linearly with area).

We can express this as a functional to be minimized:

$$F(u) = k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2 \, dA - \int_\Omega fu \, dA \tag{D.11}$$

And take the functional derivative:

$$\frac{d}{d\epsilon}F = \lim_{\epsilon\to 0}\frac{F(u+\epsilon v)-F(u)}{\epsilon} \tag{D.12}$$

$$= \lim_{\epsilon\to 0}\frac{k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega |\nabla(u+\epsilon v)|^2 - |\nabla u|^2\, dA - \int_\Omega f(u+\epsilon v) - fu\, dA}{\epsilon} \tag{D.13}$$

$$= \lim_{\epsilon\to 0}\frac{k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega |\nabla u+\epsilon\nabla v|^2 - |\nabla u|^2\, dA - \int_\Omega fu+\epsilon fv - fu\, dA}{\epsilon} \tag{D.14}$$

$$= \lim_{\epsilon\to 0}\frac{k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega (\nabla u+\epsilon\nabla v)\cdot(\nabla u+\epsilon\nabla v) - \nabla u\cdot\nabla u\, dA - \int_\Omega \epsilon fv\, dA}{\epsilon} \tag{D.15}$$

$$= \lim_{\epsilon\to 0}\frac{k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega \nabla u\cdot\nabla u + 2\epsilon\nabla u\cdot\nabla v + \epsilon^2\nabla v\cdot\nabla v - \nabla u\cdot\nabla u\, dA - \int_\Omega \epsilon fv\, dA}{\epsilon} \tag{D.16}$$

$$= \lim_{\epsilon\to 0}\frac{k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega 2\epsilon\nabla u\cdot\nabla v + \epsilon^2\nabla v\cdot\nabla v\, dA - \int_\Omega \epsilon fv\, dA}{\epsilon} \tag{D.17}$$

$$= \lim_{\epsilon\to 0} k\frac{1}{2}\int_\Omega 2\nabla u\cdot\nabla v + \epsilon\nabla v\cdot\nabla v\, dA - \int_\Omega fv\, dA \tag{D.18}$$

$$= k\int_\Omega \nabla u\cdot\nabla v\, dA - \int_\Omega fv\, dA \tag{D.19}$$

Thus the variational form $\frac{d}{d\epsilon}F = 0$ is:

$$k\int_\Omega \nabla u\cdot\nabla v\, dA - \int_\Omega fv\, dA = 0 \tag{D.20}$$

This relation is true for any *almost* arbitrary variation v. In fact, v must be integrable on the domain Ω, and its first derivatives must be integrable on Ω. The space of functions meeting these requirements is known as the Sobolev space $H^1(\Omega)$. So formally, v belongs to the Sobolev space:

$$v \in H^1(\Omega) \tag{D.21}$$

Moreover, because the value of u is given at the boundary, v must be zero at the boundary. Formally, v is in the Sobolev space:

$$v \in H_0^1(\Omega) \tag{D.22}$$

D.2 Alternative Route to Variational Form

The point is that the variational form

$$k \int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla v \, dA - \int_\Omega f v \, dA = 0 \qquad \forall v \in H_0^1(\Omega) \tag{D.23}$$

may be easier to solve than the original energy functional:

$$k \frac{1}{2} \int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2 \, dA - \int_\Omega f u \, dA = 0 \tag{D.24}$$

However, the variational form can be derived by other means. In fact, there are variational formulations for which there is *no* corresponding functional to minimize. So in a sense the variational formulation is more fundamental than the calculus of variations.

To illustrate: The functional $\frac{1}{2} \int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2 \, dA$ is known as Dirichlet's energy functional. A solution u that minimizes the functional is *also* a solution to the Laplace equation $\nabla^2 u = 0$. This energy functional can be put into the variational form $\int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla v \, dA$ by using the calculus of variations. However, the variational form $\int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla v \, dA$ can also be derived directly from the Laplace equation.

$$u \text{ minimizing } \frac{1}{2} \int_\Omega |\nabla u|^2 \, dA \quad \text{also satisfies} \quad \int_\Omega \nabla u \cdot \nabla v \, dA = 0 \quad \text{iff} \quad \nabla^2 u = 0 \tag{D.25}$$

Appendix E

Tensor Identities

In this Appendix, we introduce the double dot product of two tensors, and work with the velocity gradient tensor to ultimately derive the tensor identity

$$\nabla^2\vec{u}\cdot\vec{g} = \nabla\cdot((\nabla\vec{u}+\nabla\vec{u}^T)\cdot\vec{g}) - 2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}):\mathbf{E}(\vec{g})$$

for use in Chapter 6.

E.0.1 Tensor Double Dot Product

The double dot product of two tensors, also known as the Frobenius inner product, is a generalization of the vector inner product:

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{bmatrix}, \quad Z = \begin{bmatrix} x & y \\ z & w \end{bmatrix}, \quad A:Z = ax + by + cz + dw \tag{E.1}$$

As expected, addition distributes over this form of multiplication:

$$(A+B):(Z+W) = A:Z + A:W + B:Z + B:W \tag{E.2}$$

E.0.2 Tensor Vector Divergence Identity

For a tensor T and vector $\vec{g}$:

$$T : \nabla \vec{g} = T_{11}\partial_x g_x + T_{12}\partial_x g_y + T_{21}\partial_y g_x + T_{22}\partial_y g_y \tag{E.3}$$

and

$$\nabla \cdot T = \begin{bmatrix} \partial_x & , & \partial_y \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} T_{11} & T_{12} \\ T_{21} & T_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \partial_x T_{11} + \partial_y T_{21} & , & \partial_x T_{12} + \partial_y T_{22} \end{bmatrix} \tag{E.4}$$

so that

$$(\nabla \cdot T) \cdot \vec{g} = g_x \partial_x T_{11} + g_x \partial_y T_{21} + g_y \partial_x T_{12} + g_y \partial_y T_{22} \tag{E.5}$$

Furthermore

$$T \cdot \vec{g} = \begin{bmatrix} T_{11} & T_{12} \\ T_{21} & T_{22} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} g_x \\ g_y \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} T_{11} g_x + T_{12} g_y \\ T_{21} g_x + T_{22} g_y \end{bmatrix} \tag{E.6}$$

Therefore

$$\begin{aligned}
\nabla \cdot (T \cdot \vec{g}) &= \partial_x (T_{11} g_x) + \partial_x (T_{12} g_y) + \partial_y (T_{21} g_x) + \partial_y (T_{22} g_y) && \text{(E.7)} \\
&= g_x \partial_x T_{11} + T_{11} \partial_x g_x + g_y \partial_x T_{12} + T_{12} \partial_x g_y && \text{(E.8)} \\
&\quad + g_x \partial_y T_{21} + T_{21} \partial_y g_x + g_y \partial_y T_{22} + T_{22} \partial_y g_y && \text{(E.9)} \\
&= [T_{11} \partial_x g_x + T_{12} \partial_x g_y + T_{21} \partial_y g_x + T_{22} \partial_y g_y] && \text{(E.10)} \\
&\quad + [g_x \partial_x T_{11} + g_x \partial_y T_{21} + g_y \partial_x T_{12} + g_y \partial_y T_{22}] && \text{(E.11)} \\
&= T : \nabla \vec{g} + (\nabla \cdot T) \cdot \vec{g} && \text{(E.12)}
\end{aligned}$$

We have shown:

$$\nabla \cdot (T \cdot \vec{g}) = T : \nabla \vec{g} + (\nabla \cdot T) \cdot \vec{g} \tag{E.13}$$

E.0.3 Application to Velocity Gradient Tensor

Substituting $T = \nabla\vec{u}$ in the identity gives:

$$\nabla \cdot (\nabla\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g}) = \nabla\vec{u} : \nabla\vec{g} + (\nabla \cdot \nabla\vec{u}) \cdot \vec{g} \tag{E.14}$$

and the 'vector Laplacian' is defined:

$$\nabla \cdot \nabla\vec{u} = \Big[\partial_x\partial_x u + \partial_y\partial_y u \quad , \quad \partial_x\partial_x v + \partial_y\partial_y v\Big] = \Big[\nabla^2 u \quad , \quad \nabla^2 v\Big] = \nabla^2\vec{u} \tag{E.15}$$

So

$$\nabla \cdot (\nabla\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g}) = \nabla\vec{u} : \nabla\vec{g} + \nabla^2\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} \tag{E.16}$$

Similarly for the transpose of the velocity gradient tensor:

$$\nabla \cdot (\nabla\vec{u}^T \cdot \vec{g}) = \nabla\vec{u}^T : \nabla\vec{g} + (\nabla \cdot \nabla\vec{u}^T) \cdot \vec{g} \tag{E.17}$$

Now, however, the last term vanishes:

$$\nabla \cdot \nabla\vec{u}^T = \Big[\partial_x\partial_x u + \partial_x\partial_y v \quad , \quad \partial_y\partial_x u + \partial_y\partial_y v\Big] \tag{E.18}$$

$$= \Big[\partial_x(\partial_x u + \partial_y v) \quad , \quad \partial_y(\partial_x u + \partial_y v)\Big] \tag{E.19}$$

$$= \Big[\partial_x(\nabla \cdot \vec{u}) \quad , \quad \partial_y(\nabla \cdot \vec{u})\Big] \tag{E.20}$$

$$= \Big[0 \quad , \quad 0\Big] \tag{E.21}$$

since we assume the fluid is **incompressible**, so $\nabla \cdot \vec{u} = 0$ everywhere.

Thus

$$\nabla \cdot (\nabla\vec{u}^T \cdot \vec{g}) = \nabla\vec{u}^T : \nabla\vec{g} \tag{E.22}$$

E.0.4 Deformation Rate Tensor Identity

Extending our notation slightly to include vector fields other than $\vec{u}$, recall that the deformation rate tensor is:

$$\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) = \frac{\nabla\vec{u} + \nabla\vec{u}^T}{2} \tag{E.23}$$

so that:

$$2\mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) = \nabla\vec{g} + \nabla\vec{g}^T \tag{E.24}$$

Then the double dot product of two such tensors is:

$$2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : 2\mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) = (\nabla\vec{u} + \nabla\vec{u}^T) : (\nabla\vec{g} + \nabla\vec{g}^T) \tag{E.25}$$

$$4\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) = \nabla\vec{u} : \nabla\vec{g} + \nabla\vec{u} : \nabla\vec{g}^T + \nabla\vec{u}^T : \nabla\vec{g} + \nabla\vec{u}^T : \nabla\vec{g}^T \tag{E.26}$$

Now, transposition affects the double dot product such that $\nabla\vec{u} : \nabla\vec{g} = \nabla\vec{u}^T : \nabla\vec{g}^T$ and $\nabla\vec{u}^T : \nabla\vec{g} = \nabla\vec{u} : \nabla\vec{g}^T$, so

$$4\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) = 2\nabla\vec{u} : \nabla\vec{g} + 2\nabla\vec{u}^T : \nabla\vec{g} \tag{E.27}$$

$$2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) = \nabla\vec{u} : \nabla\vec{g} + \nabla\vec{u}^T : \nabla\vec{g} \tag{E.28}$$

Finally,

$$\nabla \cdot ((\nabla\vec{u} + \nabla\vec{u}^T) \cdot \vec{g}) = \nabla \cdot (\nabla\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} + \nabla\vec{u}^T \cdot \vec{g}) \tag{E.29}$$

$$= \nabla \cdot (\nabla\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g}) + \nabla \cdot (\nabla\vec{u}^T \cdot \vec{g}) \tag{E.30}$$

$$= \nabla^2\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} + \nabla\vec{u} : \nabla\vec{g} + \nabla\vec{u}^T : \nabla\vec{g} \tag{E.31}$$

$$= \nabla^2\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} + 2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) \tag{E.32}$$

Therefore:

$$\nabla^2\vec{u} \cdot \vec{g} = \nabla \cdot ((\nabla\vec{u} + \nabla\vec{u}^T) \cdot \vec{g}) - 2\mathbf{E}(\vec{u}) : \mathbf{E}(\vec{g}) \tag{E.33}$$

Appendix F

Periodic Functions Weakly Converge To Their Mean

In this Appendix we prove that periodic functions weakly converge to their mean, a fact we use in Chapter 6. To keep the Appendix self-contained, we start by defining weak convergence, using the definitions duplicated in Chapter 6.

F.1 Weak Convergence

Consider a sequence of functions defined by:

$$f_n = \sin(nx) \tag{F.1}$$

the first three functions of which appear in Figure (F.1).

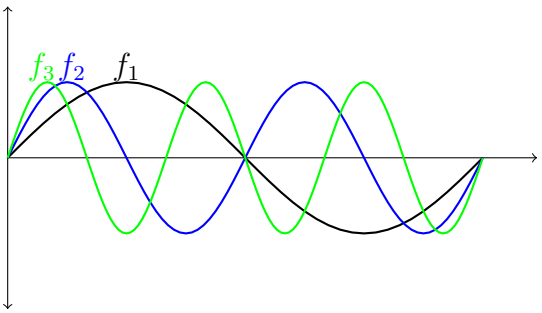


Figure F.1: The first three functions in the sequence $\sin(nx)$.

As n increases, the period of the sine wave gets smaller and smaller, but the amplitude is unchanged. In the limit as $n \to \infty$, the waveform gets infinitely 'spiky'. What does the sequence converge to? There is no intuitive sense of the sinewave sequence getting 'closer to' some limit function. In fact, the sequence does not strongly converge.

However, there is a sense in which the function sequence converges.

We multiply each function in the sequence by an arbitrary test function g, and integrate, thus creating a sequence of integrals:

$$\int g f_n \, dx \tag{F.2}$$

If the sequence of integrals (strongly) converges to a limit integral:

$$\int g f_n \, dx \to \int g f \, dx \tag{F.3}$$

then we say that f_n **weakly converges** to f, and the 'limit function' f appearing in the limit integral is known as the **weak limit.** This is also written:

$$f_n \rightharpoonup f \tag{F.4}$$

F.1.1 Periodic Functions Weakly Converge to their Mean

It is a 'standard result' that periodic functions weakly converge to their mean. In a 2002 paper [34], Lukkassen and Wall state: "We have not found proofs of [this] fact in the literature. The aim of this paper is to present such proofs." Their paper provides a rigorous proof (and generalization) of this proof. Here, however, we present a simple intuitive proof, suitable for this thesis.

Consider our example of a sine wave sequence, together with an arbitrary test function g, integrated over the domain 0 to 2π. Each integral in the sequence is of the form:

$$\int_0^{2\pi} g(x)\sin(nx)\,dx \tag{F.5}$$

Over the domain 0 to 2π, the function $\sin(nx)$ has exactly n periods, each of width $2\pi/n$. We chop up the integral into n separate integrals, each with a subdomain of width $2\pi/n$.

$$\sum_{k=1}^{n} \int_{(k-1)\frac{2\pi}{n}}^{k\frac{2\pi}{n}} g(x)\sin(nx)\,dx \tag{F.6}$$

This is shown in Figure (F.2).

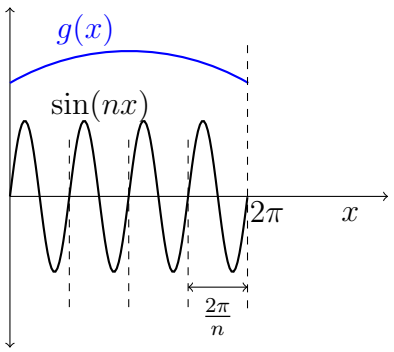


Figure F.2: The periodic function $\sin(nx)$ and test function $g(x)$.

By a change of variable, we 'stretch' the domain so that in terms of the new variable, the period of the sine wave is again 2π. The domain is dilated by factor n and now has width $2\pi n$. With change of variable $x = t/n$, we have $dx = 1/n\, dt$. Pulling the Jacobian $1/n$ out of the sum, we have:

$$\frac{1}{n}\sum_{k=1}^{n}\int_{(k-1)2\pi}^{k2\pi} g\left(\frac{t}{n}\right)\sin(t)\; dt, \qquad x = \frac{t}{n}, \quad dx = \frac{1}{n}dt \tag{F.7}$$

Put another way, we move the n dependence from the sine function to the test function g. See Figure (F.3).

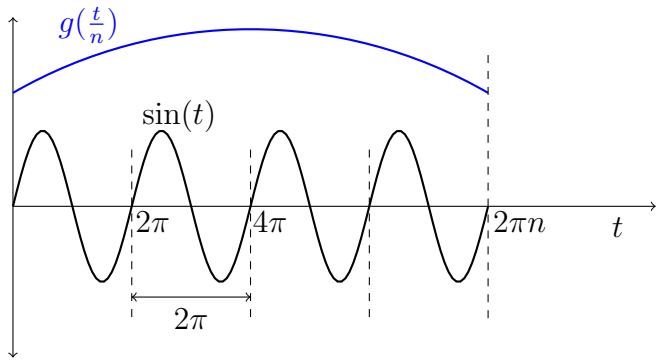


Figure F.3: Change of variable dilates the domain.

We note that a period of $\sin(t)$ is the same for all k, so we use *only* the integral from 0 to 2π, and 'transport' the appropriate bit of $g(t)$ back to the interval 0 to 2π. This is accomplished by adding $(k-1)(2\pi/n)$ to the argument of $g(t/n)$. For clarity, we shall change variables again, $t \to \xi$, to highlight the fact that while the domain of t is the interval 0 to $2\pi n$, the domain of ξ is only the interval 0 to 2π.

$$\frac{1}{n}\sum_{k=1}^{n}\int_{0}^{2\pi} g\left(\frac{\xi}{n} + (k-1)\frac{2\pi}{n}\right)\sin(\xi)\; d\xi, \qquad x = \frac{\xi}{n} \tag{F.8}$$

The reduced domain is shown in Figure (F.4).

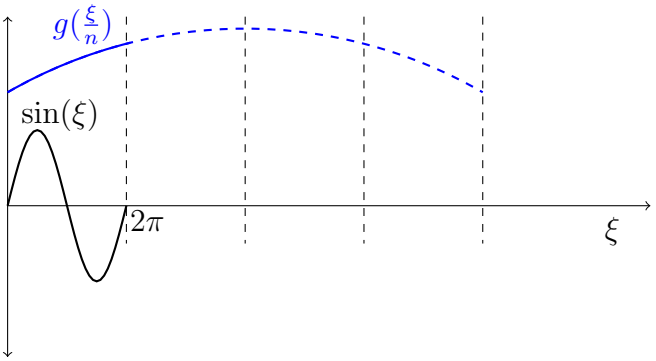


Figure F.4: Reduced domain with g parameterised by k.

So we have:

$$\frac{1}{n}\int_0^{2\pi} g\left(\frac{\xi}{n}\right)\sin(\xi)\,d\xi + \frac{1}{n}\int_0^{2\pi} g\left(\frac{\xi+2\pi}{n}\right)\sin(\xi)\,d\xi + \cdots \tag{F.9}$$

The sum can go under a single integral sign, and the $\sin(\xi)$ common factor can be pulled out of the sum:

$$\frac{1}{n}\int_0^{2\pi} \sin(\xi)\sum_{k=1}^{n} g\left(\frac{\xi+(k-1)2\pi}{n}\right)\,d\xi \tag{F.10}$$

For later convenience, introduce a 2π and shift the $1/n$ factor:

$$\frac{1}{2\pi}\int_0^{2\pi} \sin(\xi)\sum_{k=1}^{n} g\left(\frac{\xi+(k-1)2\pi}{n}\right)\frac{2\pi}{n}\,d\xi \tag{F.11}$$

What happens as $n \to \infty$? The summation term can be written:

$$\sum_{k=1}^{n} g\left((k-1)\frac{2\pi}{n} + \frac{\xi}{n}\right)\frac{2\pi}{n} \tag{F.12}$$

Since ξ is between 0 and 2π, the ξ/n term is between 0 and $2\pi/n$. As k ranges from 1 to n, the $g(k)$ term provides n 'samples' of the function at discrete points a distance $2\pi/n$ apart, with the starting point offset from 0 by the amount ξ/n. Each sample $g(k)$ is multiplied by the width of the inter-sample distance, giving n rectangles to sum up. In the limit $n \to \infty$,

this is one definition of the Riemann integral of g over the interval 2π.

$$\lim_{n\to\infty}\sum_{k=1}^{n} g\left((k-1)\frac{2\pi}{n}+\frac{\xi}{n}\right)\frac{2\pi}{n} = \int_0^{2\pi} g(x)\,dx \tag{F.13}$$

The geometry of this Riemann integral is depicted in Figure (F.5).

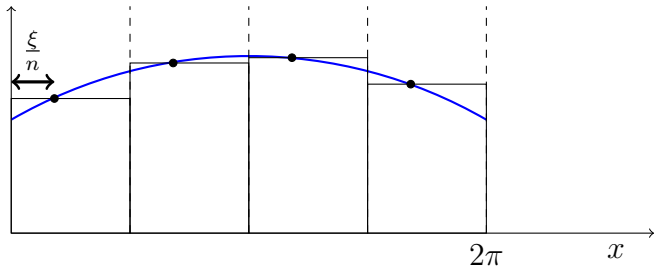


Figure F.5: The geometry of the Riemann integral of g.

Thus we have:

$$\frac{1}{2\pi}\int_0^{2\pi}\sin(\xi)\int_0^{2\pi} g(x)\,dx\,d\xi = \left(\frac{1}{2\pi}\int_0^{2\pi}\sin(\xi)\,d\xi\right)\left(\int_0^{2\pi} g(x)\,dx\right) \tag{F.14}$$

Now the integral with the sine function defines the **mean** of a function:

$$\langle\sin(x)\rangle = \frac{1}{2\pi}\int_0^{2\pi}\sin(\xi)\,d\xi \tag{F.15}$$

Therefore, we have shown that:

$$\lim_{n\to\infty}\int_0^{2\pi} g(x)\sin(nx)\,dx = \langle\sin(x)\rangle\int_0^{2\pi} g(x)\,dx \tag{F.16}$$

Or:

$$\int_0^{2\pi} g(x)\sin(nx)\,dx \to \int_0^{2\pi} g(x)\,\langle\sin(x)\rangle\,dx \tag{F.17}$$

The mean of $\sin(x)$ happens to be zero, so the limit vanishes. But the foregoing argument holds for *any* periodic function. Therefore we have shown that **periodic functions weakly converge to their mean:**

$$\int g f_n\,dx \to \int g\,\langle f\rangle\,dx \tag{F.18}$$

Bibliography

[1] Andrienko, D., Dunweg, B., and Vinogradova, O. I. Boundary slip as a result of a prewetting transition. *Journal Of Chemical Physics 119* (2003), 13106.

[2] Barrat, J.-L., and Bocquet, L. Large slip effect at a nonwetting fluid-solid interface. *Physical Review Letters 82* (1999), 4671.

[3] Barthlott, W., and Neinhuis, C. Purity of the sacred lotus, or escape from contamination in biological surfaces. *Planta 202* (1997), 1–8.

[4] Baudry, J., and Charlaix, E. Experimental evidence for a large slip effect at a nonwetting fluid-solid interface. *Langmuir 17* (2001), 5232–5236.

[5] Becker, T., and Mugele, F. Nanofluidics: Viscous dissipation in layered liquid films. *Physical Review Letters 91* (2003), 166104–1.

[6] Bocquet, L., and Barrat, J.-L. Hydrodynamic boundary conditions, correlation functions, and kubo relations for confined fluids. *Physical Review E 49* (1994), 3079.

[7] Bonaccurso, E., Butt, H.-J., and Craig, V. S. J. Surface roughness and hydrodynamic boundary slip of a newtonian fluid in a completely wetting system. *Physical Review Letters 90* (2003), 144501.

[8] Bonaccurso, E., Kappl, M., and Butt, H.-J. Hydrodynamic force measurements: Boundary slip of water on hydrophilic surfaces and electrokinetic effects. *Physical Review Letters 88* (2002), 076103.

[9] Choi, C.-H., and Kim, C.-J. Large slip of aqueous liquid flow over a nanoengineered superhydrophobic surface. *Physical Review Letters 96* (2006), 066001.

[10] Choi, C.-H., Ulmanella, U., Kim, J., Ho, C.-M., and Kim, C.-J. Effective slip and friction reduction in nanograted superhydrophobic microchannels. *Physics Of Fluids 18* (2006), 087105.

[11] Cottin-Bizonne, C., Barentin, C., Charlaix, E., Bocquet, L., and Barrat, J.-L. Dynamics of simple liquids at heterogeneous surfaces: Molecular-dynamics simulations and hydrodynamic description. *The European Physical Journal E 15* (2004), 427–438.

[12] Cottin-Bizonne, C., Barrat, J.-L., Bocquet, L., and Charlaix, E. Low-friction flows of liquid at nanopatterned interfaces. *Nature Materials 2* (2003), 237.

[13] Cottin-Bizonne, C., Cross, B., Steinberger, A., and Charlaix, E. Boundary slip on smooth hydrophobic surface: Intrinsic effects and possible artifacts. *Physical Review Letters 94* (2005), 056102.

[14] Craig, V. S. J., Neto, C., and Williams, D. R. M. Shear-dependent boundary slip in an aqueous newtonian liquid. *Physical Review Letters 87* (2001), 054504.

[15] Davis, A. M. J., and Lauga, E. The friction of a mesh-like superhydrophobic surface. *Physics Of Fluids 21* (2009), 113101.

[16] Davis, A. M. J., and Lauga, E. Geometric transition in friction for flow over a bubble mattress. *Physics Of Fluids 21* (2009), 011701.

[17] Davis, A. M. J., and Lauga, E. Hydrodynamc friction of fakir-like superhydrophobic surfaces. *Journal of Fluid Mechanics 661* (2010), 402–411.

[18] de Gennes, P. G. On fluid/wall slippage. *Langmuir 18* (2002), 3413–3414.

[19] Einzel, D., Panzer, P., and Liu, M. Boundary condition for fluid flow: Curved or rough surfaces. *Physical Review Letters 64* (1990), 2269.

[20] Granick, S., Zhu, Y., and Lee, H. Slippery questions about complex fluid flowing past solids. *Nature 2* (2003), 221.

[21] Hecht, F. New development in freefem++. *J. Numer. Math. 20*, 3-4 (2012), 251–265.

[22] Hendy, S. C., and Lund, N. J. Effective slip boundary conditions for flows over nanoscale chemical heterogeneities. *Physical Review E 76* (2007), 066313.

[23] Honig, C., and Ducker, W. No-slip hydrodynamic boundary condition for hydrophilic particles. *Physical Review Letters 98* (2007), 028305.

[24] Huang, P., Guasto, J. S., and Breuer, K. S. Direct measurement of slip velocities using three-dimensional total internal reflection velocimetry. *Journal Of Fluid Mechanics 566* (2006), 447 – 464.

[25] Hyväluoma, J., and Harting, J. Slip flow over structured surfaces with entrapped microbubbles. *Physical Review Letters 100* (2008), 246001.

[26] Joly, L., Ybert, C., and Bocquet, L. Probing the nanohydrodynamics at liquid-solid interfaces using thermal motion. *Physical Review Letters 96* (2006), 046101.

[27] Joseph, P., Cottin-Bizonne, C., Benoit, J.-M., Ybert, C., Journet, C., Tabeling, P., and Bocquet, L. Slippage of water past superhydrophobic carbon nanotube forests in microchannels. *Physical Review Letters 97* (2006), 156104.

[28] Kunert, C., and Harting, J. Roughness induced boundary slip in microchannel flows. *Physical Review Letters 99* (2007), 176001.

[29] Kusumaatmaja, H., and Yeomans, J. M. Modeling contact angle hysteresis on chemically patterned and superhydrophobic surfaces. *Langmuir 23* (2007), 6019–6032.

[30] Lauga, E., and Brenner, M. P. Dynamic mechanisms for apparent slip on hydrophobic surfaces. *Physical Review E 70* (2004), 026311.

[31] Lauga, E., Brenner, M. P., and Stone, H. A. Microfluidics: The no-slip boundary condition. *To appear as Ch. 15 in Handbook of Experimental Fluid Dynamics, Springer. 1* (2006), 1.

[32] Lauga, E., and Stone, H. A. Effective slip in pressure-driven stokes flow. *Journal of Fluid Mechanics 489* (2003), 55–77.

[33] Lee, C., and Kim, C.-J. C. Influence of surface hierarchy of superhydrophobic surfaces on liquid slip. *Langmuir 27* (2011), 4243–4248.

[34] Lukkassen, D., and Wall, P. On weak convergence of locally periodic functions. *Journal of Nonlinear Mathematical Physics 9* (2002), 45–57.

[35] Lund, N. J., and Hendy, S. C. Effective slip length for mixed-slip flow. *ANZIAM Journal 76* (2008), 066313.

[36] Lund, N. J., Zhang, X. P., Mahelona, K., and Hendy, S. C. An effective slip length for mixed-slip flow. *Physical Review E 76* (2012), 066313.

[37] Neinhuis, C., and Barthlott, W. Characterization and distribution of water-repellent, self-cleaning plant surfaces. *Annals of Botany 79* (1997), 667–677.

[38] Neto, C., Craig, V. S. J., and Williams, D. R. M. Evidence of shear-dependent boundary slip in newtonian liquids. *European Physical Journal E 12* (2003), 018.

[39] Neto, C., Evans, D. R., Bonaccurso, E., Butt, H.-J., and Craig, V. S. J. Boundary slip in newtonian liquids: a review of experimental studies. *Reports on Progress in Physics 68* (2005), 2859.

[40] Ng, C.-O., and Wang, C. Y. Stokes shear flow over a grating: Implications for superhydrophobic slip. *Physics Of Fluids 21* (2009), 013602.

[41] Ng, C.-O., and Wang, C. Y. Apparent slip arising from stokes shear flow over a bidimensional patterned surface. *Microfluid Nanofluid 8* (2010), 361–371.

[42] Onda, T., Shibuichi, S., Satoh, N., and Tsujii, K. Super-water-repellent fractal surfaces. *Langmuir 12* (1996), 2125.

[43] Ou, J., Perot, B., and Rothstein, J. P. Laminar drag reduction in microchannels using ultrahydrophobic surfaces. *Physics of Fluids 16* (2004), 4635.

[44] Philip, J. R. Flows satisfying mixed no-slip and no-shear conditions. *Journal of Applied Mathematics and Physics (ZAMP) 23* (1972), 353.

[45] Pit, R., Hervet, H., and Leger, L. Direct experimental evidence of slip in hexadecane: Solid interfaces. *Physical Review Letters 85* (2000), 980.

[46] Pozrikidis, C. *Introduction to Theoretical and Computational Fluid Dynamics*. Oxford University Press, 1997.

[47] Pozrikidis, C. *Fluid Dynamics: Theory, Computation, and Numerical Simulation.* Kluwer, 2001.

[48] Quéré, D. Fakir droplets. *Nature Materials 1* (2002), 14.

[49] Sbragaglia, M., and Prosperetti, A. A note on the effective slip properties for microchannel flows with ultrahydrophobic surfaces. *Physics Of Fluids 19* (2007), 043603.

[50] Schnell, E. Slippage of water over nonwettable surfaces. *Journal Of Applied Physics 27* (1956), 1149 – 1152.

[51] Steinberger, A., Cottin-Bizonne, C., Kleimann, P., and Charlaix, E. High friction on a bubble mattress. *Nature Materials 6* (2007), 665.

[52] Thompson, P. A., and Robbins, M. O. Shear flow near solids: Epitaxial order and flow boundary conditions. *Physical Review A 41* (1990), 6830.

[53] Thompson, P. A., and Troian, S. M. A general boundary condition for liquid flow at solid surfaces. *Nature 389* (1997), 360.

[54] Tretheway, D. C., and Meinhart, C. D. A generating mechanism for apparent fluid slip in hydrophobic microchannels. *Physics Of Fluids 16* (2004), 1509.

[55] Tretheway, D. C., and Meinhart, C. D. Erratum: "a generating mechanism for apparent fluid slip in hydrophobic microchannels" [phys. fluids 16, 1509 (2004)]. *Physics Of Fluids 18* (2006), 109901.

[56] Tyrrell, J. W. G., and Attard, P. Images of nanobubbles on hydrophobic surfaces and their interactions. *Physical Review Letters 87* (2001), 176104.

[57] Tyrrell, J. W. G., and Attard, P. Atomic force microscopy images of nanobubbles on a hydrophobic surface and corresponding force-separation data. *Langmuir 18* (2002), 160–167.

[58] Vinogradova, O., Koynov, K., Best, A., and Feuillebois, F. Direct measurements of hydrophobic slippage using double-focus fluorescence cross-correlation. *Physical Review Letters 102* (2009), 118302.

[59] Vinogradova, O. I. Drainage of a thin liquid film confined between hydrophobic surfaces. *Langmuir 11* (1995), 2213–2220.

[60] Vinogradova, O. I. Slippage of water over hydrophobic surfaces. *International Journal of Mineral Processing 56* (1999), 31–60.

[61] Vinogradova, O. I., and Yakubov, G. E. Dynamic effects on force measurement. 2. lubrication and the atomic force microscope. *Langmuir 19* (2003), 1227 – 1234.

[62] Vinogradova, O. I., and Yakubov, G. E. Surface roughness and hydrodynamic boundary conditions. *Physical Review E 73* (2006), 045302.

[63] Yang, S., Dammer, S. M., Bremond, N., Zandvliet, H. J. W., Kooij, E. S., and Lohse, D. Characterization of nanobubbles on hydrophobic surfaces in water. *Langmuir 23* (2007), 7072–7077.

[64] Ybert, C., Barentin, C., Cottin-Bizonne, C., Joseph, P., and Bocquet, L. Achieving large slip with superhydrophobic surfaces: Scaling laws for generic geometries. *Physics Of Fluids 19* (2007), 123601.

[65] Zhang, X. H., Quinn, A., and Ducker, W. A. Nanobubbles at the interface between water and a hydrophobic solid. *Langmuir 24* (2008), 4756–4764.

[66] Zhu, L., Attard, P., and Neto, C. Reliable measurements of interfacial slip by colloid probe atomic force microscopy. ii. hydrodynamic force measurements. *Langmuir 27* (2011), 6712 – 6719.

[67] Zhu, Y., and Granick, S. Rate-dependent slip of newtonian liquid at smooth surfaces. *Physical Review Letters 87* (2001), 096105.

[68] Zhu, Y., and Granick, S. Limits of the hydrodynamic no-slip boundary condition. *Physical Review Letters 88* (2002), 106102.